



I'm no hero.
Never was, never will be.

– John

The Story Of **Metal Gear**





The Creator

Hideo Kojima (born August 24, 1963) is a Japanese video game designer, writer, and producer originally employed at Konami.

He is the director of Kojima Productions and a former vice president of Konami Digital Entertainment, a position he held since early 2011.

He is the creator, director and writer of a number of some of the most universally praised video games, including the Metal Gear series of stealth games and the adventure games Snatcher and Policenauts, and he also produced series such as Zone of the Enders, Boktai and Castlevania: Lords of Shadow. Kojima is consistently named by fans and industry experts alike as being one of the most influential and innovative video game directors and writers in the industry, and is considered a 'fan favorite' in his field.

The Saga

1987 – 2015

Metal Gear is a series of action-adventure stealth video games, created by Hideo Kojima and developed and published by Konami. The first game, Metal Gear, was released in 1987 for the MSX2. The player takes control of a special forces operative Solid Snake who is assigned to find the titular superweapon 'Metal Gear', a bipedal walking tank with the ability to launch nuclear weapons. Several sequels have been released for multiple consoles after requests from Konami to produce new Metal Gear games. The sequels expand the original game's plot adding new characters opposing and supporting Snake, while there have also been a few prequels exploring the origins of the Metal Gear and recurring characters. Various parts were inspired by Hollywood films with character's names, settings and artworks often referencing them.

The series is famous for having pioneered the stealth game genre, in which the character initially has only one weapon and has to go through the game to accomplish his mission by himself. Other notable traits are cinematic cut scenes, intricate storylines, offbeat humor, and exploration of political and philosophical themes, with references of Hollywood films to add flavor.





Big Boss

Big Boss, real name John, also known as Jack, and formerly known as Vic Boss, Naked Snake, Punished Snake, Venom Snake, or simply Snake, was a renowned special forces operative and mercenary commander. He founded U.S. Army Special Forces Unit FOXHOUND, along with the mercenary companies Militaires Sans Frontières and Diamond Dogs, and was one of the founding members of the Patriots. Big Boss later established the military states of Outer Heaven and Zanzibar Land as bases for his companies, in order to realize his ambitions of creating a nation for soldiers. He was considered by many to be 'The Greatest Warrior of the 20th Century' and a brilliant military leader, hailed as a hero by his admirers and feared as a tyrant by his enemies.

During the Cold War, Big Boss was an apprentice to The Boss, the so-called 'Mother of Special Forces,' and later served as a black ops field agent for the CIA's FOX Unit, under Major Zero.

Having his genetic code used as part of the government project Les Enfants Terribles, Big Boss was the genetic father of Solid Snake (his subordinate and later nemesis), Liquid Snake and Solidus Snake.



Solid Snake

Solid Snake (real name David, commonly referred to as Snake, and later referred to as Old Snake) was a former spy, special operations soldier, and mercenary. He was a product of the Les Enfants Terribles project and 'son' of legendary soldier Big Boss, along with his 'brothers' Liquid Snake and Solidus Snake.

Possessing an IQ of 180 and fluent in six languages, he was known as 'the man who makes the impossible possible' and his exploits made him into a living legend among the military black ops. Initially a Green Beret, Snake was later inducted into High-Tech Special Forces Unit FOXHOUND in the mid 1990s while it was under the leadership of Big Boss. Repeatedly tasked with disarming and destroying the latest incarnation of Metal Gear, a bipedal nuclear weapon-armed tank, Snake would thrice avert potential nuclear catastrophe, becoming a famed war hero.



Liquid Snake

Liquid Snake, commonly referred to as Liquid, was the former squad commander of High-Tech Special Forces Unit FOXHOUND, and the twin brother of Solid Snake.

Liquid was one of the 'Sons of Big Boss,' created as part of the Les Enfants Terribles project, along with his clone brothers, Solid Snake and Solidus Snake. Liquid was led to believe that he was created in order to express Big Boss's recessive genetic traits, and as such, was 'inferior' to Solid Snake. Because of this, he held a strong resentment towards his twin brother, who supposedly expressed 'superior' genes, and wished to defeat him in combat, reclaiming what he felt was his birthright, and thus proving his superiority.

Possessing an IQ of 180, Liquid spoke seven languages fluently, including English, Spanish, French, Malay, and Arabic, the last of which he spoke like a native. His main language, English, was also spoken with an English accent of the Received Pronunciation dialect. He was almost an exact double of Solid Snake in terms of appearance, with the only distinguishable feature being his darker skin tone and fair hair color. He also had a tattoo on his left arm, which resembled the Rod of Asclepius, but with a sword in its place and with the words 'Temptation Revelation.'



Revolver Ocelot

Revolver Ocelot, real name Adamska, and also known as ADAM, Shalashaska, or simply Ocelot, was an operative of FOXHOUND and an agent of the Patriots. A master of interrogation and a formidable gunfighter, he was often referred to as a 'ricochet genius' in regards to his gun fighting skills. A fanatic, he was known for his affinity of Spaghetti Westerns, as evidenced by his choice of weapon and his clothing, duster and spurs, the traditional garb of cowboys. His weapon of choice was the Colt Single Action Army Revolver, which he described as 'the greatest handgun ever made.'

Throughout his career, Ocelot became personally acquainted with all four members of the Snake family: a friendly rival to Big Boss, the right hand man for Liquid Snake and Solidus Snake, and a nemesis to Solid Snake. Specializing in infiltrations of a different nature than Solid Snake and Big Boss, Ocelot often acted as a triple agent, to serve multiple interests in the same situation.



Index

1964

Virtuous Mission

34 / Prelude

36 / Close Quarters Combat

37 / Shagohod

38 / Debriefing

Operation Snake Eater

39 / Mission Briefing

40 / Operation Snake Eater

41 / Ocelot Youth

43 / Fortress Sneaking

44 / Volgin, the Torturer

46 / The Sorrow

47 / Escape from the Fortress

48 / Clash with Evil Personified

50 / Life’s End

53 / Debriefing

1970

San Hieronymo Incident

58 / Imprisonment

59 / To Arms

61 / Diversionary Ops

65 / Rescue Effort

67 / Elisa

68 / RAXA

71 / The Frank Hunter

72 / Cunningham

74 / Gene

77 / ICBMG

78 / Comradery

1974

Peace Walker Incident

82 / Clients

83 / The Spear

84 / Fearless

84 / Little Brother

85 / Tank Corps

86 / Pupa

86 / Cold Principle

87 / Air Strike

88 / Entry Gate

89 / Chrysalis

90 / Cocoon

90 / Facility

91 / Take Down

92 / Dead Ahead

93 / Boot Sequence

95 / Uninterrupted Signal

97 / Peace Walker

98 / Zero Allies

99 / Koi no Yokushiryoku

100 / Aftermath

1975

XOF Trojan Horse Operation

104 / Inspection preparations

105 / Word of Paz’s survival

105 / Chico’s imprisonment

106 / Rescuing Chico

107 / Retrieving Paz

108 / Attack on Mother Base

108 / Aftermath

1995

Outer Heaven Uprising

118 / Outer Heaven Crisis

118 / Operation Intrude N312

120 / Mercenary

121 / Metal Gear TX-55

122 / Return of Fox Hounder

122 / Just Another Dead Soldier

1998

Operation 747

1999

Zanzibar Land Disturbance

132 / Operation Intrude F014

133 / Zanzibar Breeze

135 / Reprieve of the Doctor

136 / Under the Cloud of Darkness

137 / Farewell

2002

Galuade Incident

2005

Shadow Moses Incident

148 / Introduction

149 / Intruder

149 / Encounter

151 / Warhead Storage

152 / Mantis’s Hymn

153 / Hind D

154 / Colosseo

155 / REX’s Lair

157 / Enclosure

158 / Duel

160 / Escape

161 / Aftermath

2006

Mobile Operations

2007

Tanker Incident

170 / Opening Infiltration

170 / Russian Soldiers from Kasatka

171 / Olga Gurlukovich

172 / Metal Gear?

172 / Revolver Ocelot

173 / RAY Escapes

2009

Big Shell Incident

174 / Big Shell

176 / Vamp

176 / Fortune

178 / Countdown to Disaster

179 / Metal Gear’s Already Active!

181 / The Revealed Truth

183 / Twilight Sniping

183 / Arsenal Gear

185 / The World Needs Only One Big Boss!

186 / Arsenal Is Going to Take Off!

188 / Who Am I Really?

188 / Aftermath

2014

Liquid Sun

192 / Old Snake

193 / Gekko

194 / Haven Troopers

195 / BB Corps

195 / War Zone

Solid Sun

197 / Battle at Highland

198 / Vista Mansion

199 / Laughing Octopus

199 / Breakthrough

200 / White Blood

201 / Aftermath

Third Sun

202 / Call Me Hal

203 / Midnight Shadow

204 / Paradise Lost

204 / Raging Raven

205 / Violent Ceasefire

206 / Aftermath

Twin Suns

206 / Return to Shadow Moses

207 / Cold Memories

208 / Crying Wolf and Vamp

208 / Atonement

209 / Fight of the Metal Gears

210 / Everything Ends

210 / Aftermath

Old Sun

211 / Everything Must End

212 / At Dawn

213 / I Am Lightning

214 / Full Circle

Naked Sin

215 / Everything Begins

216 / Father & Son

218 / Here's to You



2015

Ambush at Africa

222 / Ambush

223 / Rules of Nature: Rematch

224 / The Only Thing I Know for Real

225 / Aftermath

Abkhazian Coup

226 / Coup d'état

227 / Deceptions within

227 / LQ-84i's rebellion

227 / The Hot Wind Blowing

228 / Maverick's Arrival

228 / Advancing through Sukhumi

229 / Skirmishes in the old city

229 / Infiltrating the refinery plant

230 / The final takedown

230 / Dolzaev's final act

231 / Aftermath

Investigation at Guadalajara

232 / Prelude

232 / Guadalajara Sewers

233 / A startling find

234 / Desperado's backers identified

235 / Return of the Ripper

235 / Aftermath

Raid at Denver

236 / Prelude

236 / Defeating the police

237 / Skirmishes above and below

237 / What do I fight for?

238 / The Stains of Time

239 / Hostile Takeover

239 / Heavy opposition

240 / Elevator fights

241 / Red Sun

242 / Escape from Denver

242 / Moving out

243 / Duel at the Badlands

Operation Tecumseh

244 / Origin of the name

245 / Early Desperado activities

245 / Stopping the operation

246 / A twist in the plan

246 / Collective Consciousness

247 / The duel between ideals

247 / 'Nanomachines, son'

248 / It Has to be This Way

248 / Aftermath

2016

Lobito Island Incident

252 / Briefing

253 / Undercover Action

253 / Egersis

254 / Dream Land

254 / FAR

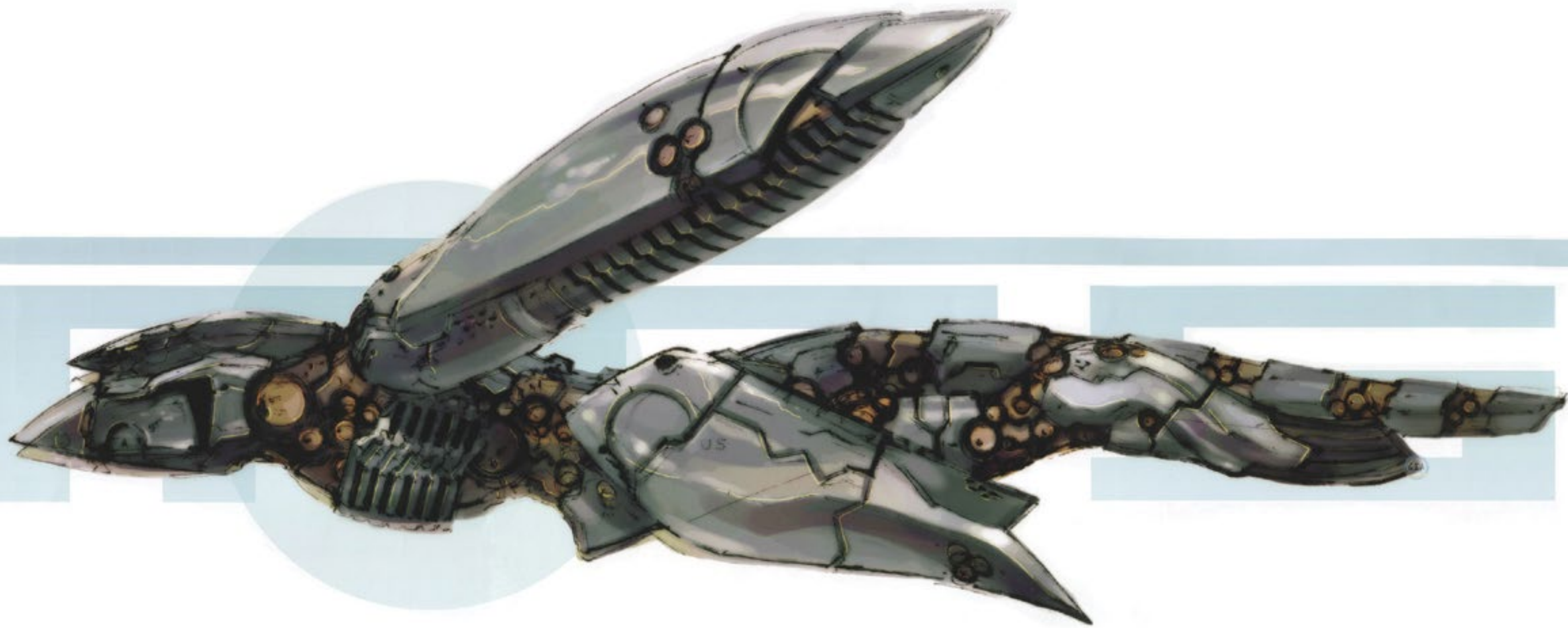
255 / Vs Metal Gear

255 / Alice

255 / Aftermath

???

SaintLogic Incident



Metal Gear Solid 3: Snake Eater

Developer	Konami Computer Entertainment Japan
Publisher	Konami
Director	Hideo Kojima
Producer	Hideo Kojima
Designer	Hideo Kojima
Artist	Yoji Shinkawa
Writer	Hideo Kojima Tomokazu Fukushima Shuyo Murata
Composer	Harry Gregson-Williams Norihiro Hibino
Platform	PlayStation 2
Release date	November 17, 2004



At the height of the Cold War, America’s greatest agent, a woman known only as The Boss, defects to the Soviet Union. At the same time, an extremist named Colonel Volgin fires an American-made portable nuclear missile at the Soviet design bureau OKB-754, sparking an international incident. In order for America to clear its name and avoid World War III, The Boss’ last apprentice, a man named Jack and codenamed ‘Naked Snake’, is dispatched by the special forces unit FOX to assassinate the woman who taught him everything.

1964 Virtuous Mission

The Virtuous Mission was a CIA operation in August of 1964 that involved a deep insertion inside the Soviet Union. A FOX agent codenamed Naked Snake was deployed via the world's first HALO jump in order to rescue a Soviet defector, the weapons scientist Nikolai Stepanovich Sokolov.

While Snake succeeded in locating and extracting Sokolov from his KGB guards, he was subsequently attacked and critically injured by a defecting American agent. Sokolov was then re-captured, and the GRU officer Volgin not only seized Sokolov's project, but also unleashed an american made Davy Crockett nuclear weapon on russian citizens, creating an international incident.

The catastrophe of the Virtuous Mission was so extreme that the CIA considered executing both Snake and his commanding officer, Major Zero. They were saved only by the need for Snake to be re-inserted a week later in Operation Snake Eater.



Prelude

In 1962, a Soviet scientist by the name of Nikolai Stepanovich Sokolov wished to defect to America. Sokolov was one of the Soviet Union's foremost weapons developers and head of the OKB-754 Design Bureau. Sokolov also requested that his family also defect to America. The man in charge of the operation was David Oh, a British-originating CIA member. The CIA successfully managed to sneak Sokolov's family over the Berlin Wall, and then Sokolov himself, although Sokolov himself ended up exhausted from traveling over 800km (500mi) during the two-week journey and was checked into a hospital to recover.

However, on October 16, 1962, President John F. Kennedy received word that the Soviets were in the process of deploying intermediate-range ballistic missiles in Cuba. The President demanded that the Soviets dismantle and remove the missiles immediately. At the same time, he announced a naval blockade to prevent further missile shipments from reaching Cuba. But the Soviets didn't back down, instead placing their armed forces on secondary alert. Soviet transport ships carrying missiles continued on course toward Cuba. U.S. and Soviet forces went on alert for an all-out nuclear war. Frantic negotiations were conducted through the U.N.'s Emergency Security Council and unofficial channels to end the hair-trigger standoff.

Finally, on October 28, the Soviet Union agreed to remove its missiles from Cuba. And so the world avoided a nuclear holocaust. This incident became known as the Cuban Missile Crisis.



But in order to get the Soviets to pull their missiles out, the U.S. had to make a deal. Most official records will say that the U.S. agreed to remove its IRBMs from Turkey and the Soviets would remove theirs from Cuba. However, the IRBMs deployed in Turkey were obsolete and the CIA was already planning on getting rid of them, serving absolutely no strategic values for both sides. The Turkey deal was a ruse - a cover story that was fed to the other intelligence agencies around the world. What the Soviets really wanted was the return of Sokolov. Sokolov was returned to the Soviets and promptly taken back to his Design Bureau and forced to finish the weapon he had been working on, including an increased amount of tests at Semipalantisk in February, 1964. However, a mole (who was in contact with The Boss via her own 'intelligence channels') within the Soviet Union reported some details about the weapon, including

the fact that it was nearing completion. The CIA, convinced that this new weapon would dramatically shift the balance of power, ordered Naked Snake, an operative of the newly formed FOX Unit to be dropped into Tselinoyarsk to recover Sokolov within three to four hours.

However, there were initial problems during the flight over to Tselinoyarsk when Naked Snake attempted to savor the Havana cigar he was currently smoking instead of putting on his pressurized mask while the depressurization was in session, only



managing to put it on at the last second when Major Zero told him off. At an altitude of thirty thousand feet, just over the Pakistani border, Snake launched himself from a special ops MC-130E Combat Talon aircraft, and performed the world's first HALO (High Altitude-Low Opening) jump. Snake successfully infiltrated Tselinoyarsk after skydiving at 200km/h (130mph) at minus 46 degrees Celsius, avoiding frostbite on the way down and activating the parachute.

Close Quarters Combat

Snake had support from his commanding officer Major Zero (changing his codename to Major Tom for this mission) and FOX's medic Para-Medic via radio. However, there was one other person on Snake's support team: The Boss, Snake's old mentor who abandoned him five years before hand without any explanation. Glad to hear her voice again, Snake continued his mission.

Snake familiarized himself with the area, and later found the rope bridge that would bring him to Rassvet to meet Sokolov. However, a guard was standing near the bridge, making it difficult to go through undetected. Snake noticed through his binoculars that a hornets' nest lay directly above the soldier and decided to shoot it down as a distraction. After crossing the bridge, Snake sneaked his way around the KGB guards, through the rubble exterior



and into a cabin towards the back of the perimeter. Inside, he confronted Sokolov (who was in the middle of burning documents relating to the new weapon), letting him know



that he was there to rescue him. Sokolov warned Snake that an anti-Khrushchev faction planned to overthrow the Soviet Premier, and that one of their members, a GRU colonel named Yevgeny Borisovitch Volgin, was preparing to retrieve Sokolov himself, along with his weapon. Volgin was looking to remove Khrushchev from power and install Leonid Brezhnev and Aleksei Kosygin in his place, using Sokolov's weapon as leverage.

As Snake and Sokolov began to make their way to the extraction point, they were ambushed by KGB operatives and held at gunpoint. The KGB agents were then killed by GRU Major Ocelot, as he mistook Naked Snake for The Boss. Upon realizing his mistake, Ocelot summoned his Ocelot Unit to surround them. Ocelot attempted to kill Snake himself, using a technique that involved ejecting the first bullet by hand, but the gun jammed at the last moment. Snake, seizing the opportunity, used his hand-to-hand CQC techniques, and managed to disable all the Ocelot Unit members while Sokolov escaped the area.

Shagohod

When they reached the rope bridge Sokolov pointed to the top of a nearby mountain, where Sokolov's Shagohod, a huge tank capable of firing a nuclear missile across large distances, was being tested. He explained that, should it be completed, it would mean the end of the Cold War, and the start of a new World War, and that the Soviet government forced him to work on the project under the threat of death, and that the project would be discontinued when he defected.



On their way over the bridge they were greeted by The Boss, only to find out that she had defected to the Soviet Union. Sokolov was captured by the Cobra Unit, and The Boss explained that Sokolov, along with a couple of Davy Crocketts (miniature nuclear shells) were her gift to her new hosts.

Colonel Volgin himself joined The Boss and Snake on the bridge. Volgin commanded The Boss to kill Snake, which she attempted to do by breaking his left elbow in a vertical arm chop, and throwing him off the bridge (yet

secretly knowing full well that he would survive the fall). Snake managed to retrieve the bandana shortly beforehand.

Snake did indeed survive, and tended to his wounds (which included a broken left rib bone, as well as lacerations to the upper arms, right elbow, and the abdomen, as well as the broken left elbow that was from The Boss) with guidance from Para-Medic two hours later. He briefly saw The Boss in a squadron of five prototype Hind-A gunships, transporting the Shagohod away from Sokolov's research facility. Volgin's troops had also captured a female KGB officer named Tatyana. Volgin, after he and Ocelot speculated that she may be Sokolov's lover, decided that she was 'a fine catch,' and discovered that she had a Kiss of death in her possession. Volgin, deciding that the Sokolov Design Bureau no longer served of any use to him, decided to test one of the Davy Crockett launchers on the OKB-754 research facility. Ocelot, upon learning this development, attempted to stop him, seemingly horrified that Volgin would actually try



to nuke their fellow countrymen, even if they were on the opposing side. Volgin then stated that the intelligence would nonetheless think that it was The Boss who pulled the trigger instead of himself, before saying 'Remember the Alamo,' and then firing the weapon. OKB-754 was completely wiped out in the explosion, which Snake witnessed as he prepared for extraction via the Fulton Recovery System.

Debriefing

The launching of the warhead led Khrushchev to believe it was the U.S. who fired the nuke, since the MC-130E was picked up on radar within Soviet air space. As a result of the international controversy that ensued, Naked Snake was also detained by the military for any possible involvement in The Boss's defection while he was recovering in the ICU, heavily questioned, and awaiting possible execution, and various key members of the CIA were also under house arrest due to fear that the non-savory members would follow her example and defect.



Operation Snake Eater

Operation Snake Eater was a CIA operation conducted in Tselinoyarsk, USSR, in August and September 1964. Its official aims were to assassinate the founding member of the Cobra Unit, The Boss, and to eliminate the threat posed by the nuclear-armed Shagohod weapon.

In truth, the entire operation was part of an already existing plan to recover the Philosophers' Legacy from Soviet hands, which had been revised in the wake of Virtuous Mission's failure and Volgin's destruction of the Sokolov Design Bureau.

Mission Briefing

Following the failure of the Virtuous Mission, Soviet Premier Nikita Khrushchev made a telephone call to U.S. President Lyndon B. Johnson, blaming him for the nuclear attack on OKB-754, in Tselinoyarsk, due to an American aircraft having been detected in their airspace. Attempting to avert a potential nuclear war, Johnson assured him that the affair was orchestrated by The Boss and GRU colonel Yevgeny Borisovitch Volgin, the former having defected to the Soviet Union, taking two portable Davy Crocketts with her. However, Khrushchev demanded that America prove its innocence, admitting that he'd need proof to keep the Red Army from initiating war, as his power base and control over the army had decreased since the Cuban incident. The specific proof he asked for was for the U.S. to assassinate The Boss themselves, and implied that he wished the same for Volgin. Because of this as well as the earlier failure of the Virtuous Mission, the Federal Government had also placed the situation at DEFCON 2.

Afterwards, Major Zero of FOX visited Naked Snake at an advanced ICU, where the latter had been recovering since the Virtuous Mission. Because of the previous incident, Snake had frequently been interrogated by the top brass about his supposed involvement in The Boss's defection, believing him to be an accomplice and traitor. Zero informed Snake that they had a

way to save the FOX unit by undertaking a mission to clear their names. The CIA had chosen Snake to assassinate The Boss, since he was her last apprentice, and that if he failed, both he and Zero were to be executed.

With the United States' reputation on the line and the two nations on the verge of World War III, Snake was sent back to the Soviet Union in order to eliminate The Boss and her Cobra Unit, and to rescue Nikolai Stepanovich Sokolov once more. Additionally, he was tasked with eliminating Volgin and the threat posed by the nuclear armed Shagohod. In exchange for America's cooperation in eliminating The Boss and Volgin, the KGB also supplied the FOX unit with one of their communications satellites as well as giving them contact with ADAM and EVA, the codenames of two NSA agents who had defected to the Soviet Union in September, 1960. Specifically, ADAM had infiltrated the ranks of GRU and would also supply Snake with an escape route as soon as the mission was accomplished.



Operation Snake Eater

At 11:30PM on August 30, 1964, Naked Snake was deployed into Tselinoyarsk via a D-21 drone, launched from a U.S. M-21 aircraft, 30,000 feet above the Arctic Ocean. They made their approach from the North Pole because the airspace of their original route was now heavily guarded due to the events of the Virtuous Mission. After a close call with two Soviet MiGs, the M-21 successfully inserted Snake into the region, with Snake ejecting before it crashed. Major Zero and Para-Medic were to again serve as his radio support, along with Mr. Sigint, an expert on advanced weapons and technology.

Snake's first objective was to return to the abandoned factory in Rassvet and rendezvous with ADAM. On the way to meet him, Snake was confronted by The Boss who greeted him with a soft smile and unexpected words 'Looks like death wasn't ready for you yet. That arm still hurt?' This smile soon turned into an alarming glare with a tussle of CQC, where within mere seconds, The Boss over-powered Snake and threw him to the ground. She warned him to abandon his mission and leave; for she would kill him should they meet again in the future. To further impede Snake's progress, The Boss dismantled his gun, destroyed the D-21 drone, alerting nearby Soviet ground forces, and used her horse to stomp on Snake's hand, injuring him (though not to the point of need for

medical attention). Despite her warning, Snake continued on anyway, sneaking his way into Rassvet to await the arrival of ADAM. After a quick search of the area, he was confronted by a woman on a motorcycle identifying herself as EVA, ADAM's fellow operative in the KGB. Despite



claiming that she had been sent in ADAM's place to assist Snake, she was unable to provide the pass phrase 'La Li Lu Le Lo.' Only when EVA saved Snake from a GRU ambush did he accept her assistance.

Retreating into the factory, EVA provided Snake with a scientist disguise to help in his infiltration, and a new custom-made M1911 pistol, as well as returning the Mk22 that he had lost during the Virtuous Mission. As Snake was about to leave, however, he was told to stay and rest, as EVA warned that the jungle would be too dangerous to traverse at night without a guide. During the night, EVA, who was providing lookout while Snake slept, transmitted a message to her superiors using a briefcase-enclosed vacuum radio.

Ocelot Youth

Snake was awakened the following morning as EVA prepared to depart, but was soon alerted by approaching footsteps outside. Identifying GRU Major Ocelot and his troops, Snake judged that it would be difficult to sneak past them, considering their numbers. Telling EVA to hide, Snake proceeded to take down the soldiers one by one. After successfully defeating the Ocelot Unit, he eventually found Major Ocelot himself restraining a captive EVA. Surprised to learn that his prisoner was a woman, and commenting on her use of perfume, Ocelot attempted to shoot Snake with his new revolver, but had forgotten that the gun only carried six bullets. Utilizing the distraction, EVA overpowered him and kicked him from the platform they were both standing atop. As Ocelot made his escape, EVA considered shooting him to conceal her and Snake's tracks, but Snake stayed her hand. She then told Snake that she needed to return to Volgin before Ocelot did, riding away on her motorcycle. Snake then headed to Graniny Gorki, where EVA had told him that Sokolov was located.



On his way to Graniny Gorki, Snake encountered Major Ocelot once more, waiting on the opposite side of a crevice in Bolshaya Past. His retreat blocked by armed soldiers, Snake participated in a gun duel with Ocelot, before a swarm of hornets surrounded and attacked them. With Ocelot escaping, Snake, blinded by the cloud of insects, survived by dropping down the crevice into the mazelike cavern below. Snake ventured deep into the cave and eventually found the exit, though it was blocked by The Pain, a member of The Boss's Cobra Unit who possessed telekinetic control over hornets. Using his hornets to shield himself and to attack Snake, The Pain initially seemed invulnerable until Snake eventually found an opening and defeated the Cobra member. After tending to his wounds, Snake left the cave and headed toward an aqueduct leading to a warehouse.



Approaching the warehouse in Ponizovje, Snake surveilled the dock area and witnessed Cobra members The End, The Fear, and The Boss, along with Colonel Volgin, Sokolov, and the latter's supposed

lover Tatyana (a disguised EVA). Volgin threatened the rebellious Sokolov by harming Tatyana with his powers of electricity. The Boss also prevented Ocelot from shooting Sokolov though Russian Roulette, and scolded him for his recklessness at the crevice, before delivering the news on The Pain's demise to Volgin. Shortly after The Fear left to deal with Naked Snake, it began to rain, and all present dispersed, with Volgin taking Tatyana away to 'entertain' him until the weather cleared. Unperturbed, Snake ventured forth, infiltrating the warehouse in order to reach Graniny Gorki.



Fortress Sneaking

Entering the research laboratory in Graniny Gorki, Snake donned the scientist disguise given to him by EVA, and made his way through the facility. Upon entering the building's main office, he found the facility's director, Dr. Aleksandr Leonovitch Granin, who had recently been drinking. Granin was bitter at Volgin's funding being diverted to the Shagohod's development, rather than his own weapon: a bipedal tank that he described as a 'Metal Gear' (named for being a missing link between infantry and artillery). Granin intended to send documents concerning Metal Gear to a friend in the United States.

Granin told Snake of the Philosophers' Legacy, the source of Volgin's vast wealth that he had used to pay for advanced weapons research and development, as well as the construction of the Groznyj Grad fortress in the mountains. Hoping for Snake to take Sokolov back to the United States, and for his own weapon to be recognized as superior, Granin provided him with a key card to help him reach the mountains, via a locked door in the Ponizovje warehouse. He also mentioned a secret underground tunnel that ran around the perimeter of Groznyj Grad which Snake could use to secretly infiltrate the base.

After leaving the facility and heading back to the warehouse, Snake was attacked by The Fear, who was equipped with experimental stealth suit and possessed superhuman abilities. Despite an intense battle, Snake defeated the Cobra member, and headed onwards. Returning to the warehouse and utilizing Granin's card, Snake was contacted by EVA to say that she would rendezvous with him atop the mountain, and that she would provide him with a key to access the underground tunnel. She also warned that The End, the centenarian sniper of the Cobra Unit, was waiting for him ahead, in the Sokrovenno forest. Reaching the forest, Snake engaged in an extensive sniper battle with The End, who was eventually defeated. Following The End's death, the way to the Krasnogorje mountains was clear and Snake made his way to the top to meet with EVA.



Meeting inside some mountaintop ruins, EVA handed Snake the key for the underground tunnel leading to Groznyj Grad, as well as explaining to him that she also secured a WIG for use as an escape craft from

Tselinoyarsk, and that it was at Rokovoj Bereg. She warned him that Sokolov was being held in the highly secured west wing of the fortress's weapons lab, and that he could only enter by disguising himself as Major Raikov of GRU. The pair then stepped out onto the mountain side after hearing a gunshot (originating from Volgin's torture) to view Groznyj Grad itself in the distance. EVA pointed out the various wings of the fortress, before departing on her bike to continue playing her 'other part'. Looking through his scope, Snake witnessed Volgin pummeling an oil drum with his fists, until blood began seeping from the bottom. When Volgin hit the drum up into the air, Granin's lifeless body fell out of it, having earlier been suspected of being a spy. Snake also saw Ocelot, The Boss, and the familiar Tatyana inside the base.

Descending into the tunnels, Snake was confronted by the penultimate surviving Cobra, The Fury. After another tense battle, Snake defeated the flamethrower-wielding soldier and was chased deeper into the tunnel by blazing trails of fire, caused by The Fury's exploding corpse. The destruction ultimately caused the caving in of the underground catacombs, rendering them inaccessible.

Volgin, the Torturer

Snake then ascended a ladder, infiltrating into the heart of Groznyj Grad. Snake proceeded to locate and knock out Raikov, before obtaining the latter's uniform, and used the mask he had been provided with at the start of the mission to disguise himself as he searched for Sokolov (the mask was originally designed as part of a cancelled mission to disguise a CIA member as Raikov to steal Soviet documents). After finding Sokolov, he witnessed Tatyana taking a film from him before leaving. Making his way into the room, Sokolov noticed and recognized him as 'the man from the CIA.' Sokolov explained Phase II, a method he devised to allow the Shagohod to fire missiles at incredible distances. They simply placed a rocket booster engine onto the tank, which allowed to travel over 300 miles an hour (483km/h), which extended the Shagohod's firing distance from 2,500 miles (4,000km) to over 6,000 miles (10,000km)... enough to strike anywhere in the United States, from anywhere in the Soviet Union.

Volgin was planning on mass-producing the weapon in about 24 hours, and distributing them to all the countries of the Eastern Bloc, essentially ending the Cold War and leading the world into a full-blown nuclear war. Snake asked Sokolov what the best way to destroy the Shagohod was, and Sokolov remembered that some C3 would easily help destroy it. Snake also learned that 'Tatyana' was not

actually Sokolov's lover, but his supervisor on the Shagohod project before Volgin interfered, and that she actually was supposed to pose as Volgin's lover. He also told Snake to assure his family is safe, refusing to leave the base as he realizes that Khrushchev is going to send him to the gulags, and even if he did successfully defect to America, he'd only be used to create their war machines anyway.



As Snake was about to escort Sokolov from the base, they were confronted by Volgin, who easily saw through Snake's disguise. As Volgin shot out Sokolov's knees, The Boss appeared and pulled off Snake's disguise before attacking him, and throwing him to the ground. Volgin demanded The Boss leave him, as Volgin wanted payback for what Snake had done to Raikov. After getting revenge on Snake for hurting Raikov by brutally beating up Snake, he took him to Groznyj Grad's prison to torture him.

When Snake awoke, he was hanging by his wrists and unable to see because he had a plastic bag placed on him, but could hear Volgin brutally beating Sokolov, the latter

eventually apparently killed. Volgin then drenched Snake in water and repeatedly electrocuted him, demanding to know what the CIA knew and whether or not they were after the Philosophers' Legacy. The Boss tells Volgin that Naked Snake was trained by her not to give in to torture, thus making his attempts fruitless, but Volgin continued to torture Snake anyway, as well as reveal the location of the Legacy; in the process, a transmitter fell out of Snake's pocket, and Volgin demanded to know who put it on him. After a pause, The Boss told Volgin she had planted it on him so the Cobras could ambush him, and that trying to break Snake was useless, as he had been trained by her not to. Knowing that the Cobras wouldn't be killed by Snake if they knew where he would be by tracing his movements, Volgin demanded that The Boss prove she wasn't a spy by cutting out Snake's eyes, which would demoralize him. The Boss pulled off the bag covering Snake's head. When she saw his face, she hesitated, but just as she was about to, Tatyana pulled her away, demanding that she stop and insisting that Snake had suffered enough. Ocelot then accused Tatyana of being the spy and decided to 'test' her. He juggled his three guns (one of which contained a single bullet) and fired one randomly six times (as he did to Sokolov on the docks). Snake, unwilling to let Ocelot hurt Tatyana, threw his suspended body into Ocelot, making him fling one of his guns into the air; as he caught it, it went off, hitting Snake in the right eye and muzzle-burning it, much to Tatyana's horror, and then screamed in agony. After being reprimanded by The Boss, Ocelot confronted Snake

briefly, telling him that seeing Snake endure Volgin's torture has led to him changing his opinions about torture (during the conversation, he also slipped the transmitter back into Snake via one of his wounds). As Volgin and Ocelot left, The Boss took one of Ocelot's revolvers, loaded it with a single bullet and shot Snake in the leg, and gave him the unloaded SAA without anyone noticing. As Snake watched The Boss leave, Tatyana came over to him, revealing herself as EVA. She told Snake to escape as she had his items and weapons, and informed him of an escape route he could use to escape the fortress and meet up with her.

As Snake awaited in his cell, he was given a fork, which he used to pull out the bullet The Boss had fired into his leg, which he was surprised to discover was actually a fake death pill. He also befriended Johnny Sasaki, the guard of his cell, as they engage in conversation about Johnny's family, the futility of the Cold War, and how their countries were once great friends. He also gave Snake back his cig gas spray gun not knowing what it actually was (he thought that they were just cigarettes). Despite the friendly conversation that the two had, Johnny refused to let Snake out of his cell as a request, much to Snake's irritation. Eventually, Snake managed to escape.

The Sorrow

After escaping from Groznyj Grad prison, he got a call from EVA. The latter gave him bad news about the escape path, as Volgin's forces had anticipated the leak and closed it down. With no other options, Snake made his way into the underground sewer system while being chased by Ocelot and his Ocelot Unit. Just as they caught up, Ocelot placed a single bullet into his revolver, and pulled the trigger. After nothing happened, Snake leaped from the drainage waterfall into the river below. Snake, near death, was confronted by The Sorrow, who tormented him with the souls of everyone he had killed during his mission. After using the revival pill planted in his tooth, he awakened, choking on water below the surface of the river. Having drifted much further downstream, he swam to the riverbank, and phoned EVA. She told him to meet her in a cave behind a waterfall upstream.

After EVA met up with him, she gave him an eye patch to wear to cover the severely injured eye from the torture earlier and the two talked things over, discussing what they would do after the mission. A butterfly flew nearby Snake, and he attempted to catch it with his hand, but thanks to only having one eye, he missed. After resting, EVA told Snake to use the tunnel up ahead to re-enter Groznyj Grad and gave him some of the C3 she had stolen earlier. The Shagohod ran on liquid fuel and in its hangar there were four tanks filled with it. In order to efficiently destroy the

hangar, Snake would have to lay C3 onto each of the tanks. She then left, although not before snapping a picture of Snake with her button camera as 'insurance' in case he betrayed her. After traveling through the tunnel, he climbed up a ladder to the northwestern section of Groznyj Grad. However, shortly after exiting the manhole cover, a BTR-152 APC parked one of its tires directly over the manhole. With the manhole being inaccessible, along with the gate being closed, Snake was essentially trapped in Groznyj Grad.



Escape from the Fortress

After making his way back into Groznyj Grad, and sneaking into the Shagohod's hangar, Snake planted the C3 onto the four liquid fuel containers scattered around. Just as he was about to set the last C3, he reshaped the explosive into a butterfly, tossed it into the air, and then caught it, and then placed it onto the last fuel container.

After setting the timer, he was spotted by Volgin and Ocelot, with EVA lying on the ground behind them. The Boss quickly appeared and disarmed Snake, throwing his weapons across the floor. Volgin declared that he had discovered that Tatyana was a spy after she was discovered sneaking around the fortress' underground vault. When she was discovered, they found the microfilm containing all the data of the Philosophers' Legacy on her. Snake asked Volgin what exactly the Legacy was. Volgin explained that the Legacy was a vast sum of money collected by the most powerful men in Russia, America, and China during the Second World War. These men became known as the Philosophers. The money was collected as a means to secretly fund projects vital to winning the war: the atomic bomb, rocket technology, and the Cobra Unit were all paid for because of the Legacy. During the confusion that ensued after the end of the war, Volgin's father hatched a series of plots to ensure that the Soviet Union would have total control over the Legacy; he laundered all the money

into banks in Switzerland, Australia, and Hong Kong. The microfilm contained a record of all of those transactions, listing specifically where all the money was being kept. After his father's death, Volgin learned of the Legacy, and obtained the microfilm.

After explaining all this, Volgin then explained how, with the help of Brezhnev and his allies, he had built Groznyj Grad and Granin's research facility. However, after Granin failed to produce results, Volgin turned to Sokolov's invention: the Shagohod. His position as a member of GRU meant it was difficult for him to attack the facility directly. Thankfully for him, the spy network set up by the Philosophers still existed, and he utilized this to contact The Boss, suggesting she defect. The Boss agreed, and the Shagohod was theirs. The conflict between the Philosophers had torn the world in two, but with the Legacy and the Shagohod, Volgin intended to heal that rift and make the world whole again. Volgin handed the Legacy to The Boss, telling her to take good care of it, and The Boss left, taking EVA with her, although not before hinting to Volgin that Snake may have planted C3 in the base.

Clash with Evil Personified

Volgin then challenged Snake, telling him this was a once in a lifetime battle. Snake valiantly fought Volgin with Ocelot's support. Realizing that Snake was most likely going to win the fight halfway through, Volgin demanded that Ocelot shoot him. Ocelot refused, telling Volgin that he couldn't follow that command as he made a promise to The Boss not to do that kind of thing. Volgin, furiously reminding Ocelot that he was his commanding officer, then tried to kill him by firing a large beam of electricity, to which Ocelot countered with his revolvers. Ocelot then told Volgin (while addressing him by his last name instead of 'Colonel') that he should fight like a man. A PA announcement then came in mentioning that bombs were located in the weapons hangar, and that all non-EOD personnel were to evacuate the base immediately.



Volgin told Ocelot to find the bombs, and after some hesitation, Ocelot proceeded to do so, although not before encouraging Snake with his hand gesture. Snake then valiantly defeated Volgin, beating him hard enough for him

to cough up blood. Snake then escaped from the hangar, as it exploded, and found EVA waiting for him outside. She told him that she had a WIG set up in waiting at a nearby lake. Snake was hesitant at first, saying he still needed to see The Boss, before EVA told him that The Boss was waiting for him there. As they prepared to leave, the Shagohod burst from out of the hangar, being piloted by Volgin.



Being pursued by Volgin and attacked by the remaining soldiers of the fortress, EVA came up with a plan: she had laid C3 on the struts of the bridge leading to the jungle, which they could shoot, detonating the bridge and taking the Shagohod with it. However, they also ended up being chased by Ocelot, culminating in Snake rescuing Ocelot after his recklessness nearly got him killed by falling debris. Upon arrival at the runway, the Shagohod drove behind them along with several personnel on motorcycles. Ocelot was right behind the Shagohod and was about to pass it when Volgin decided to take the Shagohod to its maximum speed to run down EVA and Snake, forcing Ocelot to pull over due to the activation of the boosters nearly blinding him, angrily shouting 'son of

a bitch' to Volgin. Volgin also did this knowing that Ocelot was behind the rocket boosters as payback to Ocelot for disobeying his prior command during his battle with Snake. Eventually, Snake and EVA made it to the area leading to the bridge, also evading being run over by the Shagohod at the last minute. Volgin, as soon as he noticed that they evaded him, attempted to brake, causing him to slam against the steering controls as it braked violently, eventually continuing the chase. With Volgin and various GRU motorcyclists chasing Snake and EVA out of Groznyj Grad, the two managed to make it to the bridge, blowing it up, hoping it would take the Shagohod with it.

At first it seemed they were successful but before they could celebrate, the Shagohod's front section emerged from the smoke, having maintained its grip to the hanging section of bridge, after its main body had fallen into the water. Snake and EVA, determined to finish it off, drove around the Shagohod, shooting its rear side where a weak spot had been exposed, thanks to the C3. The Shagohod was eventually disabled after multiple hits from Snake's RPG launcher. Volgin then stepped out of the Shagohod, ripping various cables out of it and holding onto them, using his body's electrical current to control the Shagohod. Eventually, Snake shot Volgin and Volgin fell to his knees. Stepping up once again, Volgin was suddenly struck by a bolt of lightning, setting him alight and causing the bullet bandoliers slung over his chest to explode, killing him in the process.

With the threat of the Shagohod finally destroyed, Snake and EVA continued heading to the WIG they had planned to escape in, still being tailed by enemy soldiers on motorcycles and flying platforms. After evading the frantic pursuit, EVA's motorcycle crashed, sending both Snake and herself flying from the vehicle, and resulting in EVA's impalement by a tree branch just above the hip. EVA survived and was helped to her feet by Snake, after which he tended to both their wounds, including a lacerated right knee and fractured left rib for Snake, and deep cuts on the abdomen and left shoulder for EVA. The two then continued by foot through the forest environment, sneaking past the enemy soldiers who had located the wreck of their motorcycle and were on the lookout for both escapees, while Snake continued to monitor EVA's condition. Eventually, they both arrived at the WIG's location on the lake at Rokovoj Berej, but Snake stopped beside a field of white flowers nearby, where he knew The Boss would be waiting for him. Snake left EVA temporarily, in order to go and face The Boss, while EVA prepared the aircraft for takeoff.

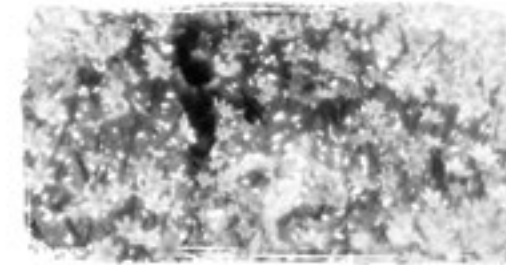
Life's End

After a fierce wind blew across the field, The Boss appeared holding one of the Davy Crockett launchers. She told Snake that all she wanted was to make the world whole again and reunite the Philosophers using the Legacy. After the Second World War, her allies, Cobra Unit, were torn apart by the Cold War. She continued, telling Snake about her past at a nuclear test site in Nevada on November 1, 1951. In 1960, the United States secretly sent her into space. America didn't have the technology to block out cosmic radiation, but that was why she was chosen, as she had already been irradiated once. In space, she realized that the Space Race was just another arena for meaningless competition, much like the Arms Race. She hopes that in the 21st Century, people will finally realize that Earth has no East, no West...no Cold War...a world without communism and capitalism.



In 1961, she was sent to Cuba to 'Bahia de Cochinos.' It was part of a CIA-sponsored invasion under the guise

of taking Cuban exiles back to their country. But the U.S. government betrayed them. The U.S. President held back their air support. Defenseless, the exiles were annihilated by the Cuban army. All she could do was watch in silence. Set up by the very country she had sacrificed so much



for, by the very government she'd dedicated her life to defending, she went underground. A year later, at Tselinoyarsk she faced The Sorrow in battle and he gave his life so she could complete her mission, demanding that she kill him. The Boss pulled open the front part of her suit, exposing a snake shaped scar running down her chest and abdomen. She explained how in June 1944 during the Landing at Normandy, when she was pregnant at the time, with The Sorrow as the father. She gave birth right there, to a boy, who was almost immediately snatched away by the Philosophers.

The Boss told Snake about the Philosophers and how the original members died in the 1930s, and how the Philosophers of today have no sense of good or evil. They have become war itself. Her father was one of them and he

explained how every war causes a shift in the times, which in itself sparks countless other conflicts and wars. The Philosophers intended to keep this cycle going forever, in an endless spiral. She also revealed that she was the last child of the Philosophers, and her father, one of the higher-ranking members of the Philosophers, had revealed to her even the most forbidden secrets of the Philosophers, and ended up being killed by them as a result. With tears rolling down her eyes, The Boss thanked Snake saying that she had never spoken about herself this much before and then gave a order via radio so that some MiG-21s would come to bomb the place in ten minutes. Loading her gun she demanded that Snake pour all he has into this final battle, in order to make it the greatest battle of their entire lives. The two then had an immense and epic battle, with Snake eventually managing to defeat his old mentor.

The two shared a final moment together before she handed him the microfilm that contained the locations of the Philosophers' Legacy, along with her gun, the Patriot. She requested that Snake shoot her, and end her life, to



complete his mission, stating to Snake, as her last words, 'There's only room for one Boss, and one Snake.' Hesitant, Snake raised the gun. There was a prolonged delay before he finally shot her, ending the life of his beloved mentor. The petals around him turned from white to a deep red as The Boss's horse sees her body and weeps.

Snake then boarded the WIG to leave with EVA, but as they were leaving, Ocelot flew in alongside them and managed to jump into the WiG, challenging Snake to a final duel. The two then engage in a physical struggle, with Ocelot seeming to gain the upper hand, proudly proclaiming that he's picked up new moves (after closely observing Snake's CQC technique). After Snake remembered how The Boss encouraged him to remember the basics of CQC at the start of the Virtuous Mission, Snake eventually fought Ocelot with better skill. Ocelot then pulls out two revolvers and loads a single (blank) bullet, proceeding to ask Snake his name. When Snake replied with his codename, Ocelot stopped him, demanding to now his real name.



No, not that name. You're not a snake and I'm not an ocelot. We're men with names. My name is Adamska. What's yours?

— Ocelot

John.

— Naked Snake

Very well, John.

Plain name, but I won't forget it.

— Ocelot

After the two drew their weapons, the duel was resolved, with neither the worse for wear. A satisfied Ocelot then bid Snake farewell and jumped from the plane into the water below. Following a near collision with the mountains, the WIG was intercepted by two MiG-21s ready to shoot them down. EVA, admitting defeat, was surprised when the MiGs suddenly disengaged, after receiving direct orders from Khrushchev.

Debriefing

When Snake and EVA got to their Alaska safe house, they joked and shared a night of passion together. The next morning, Snake awoke only to find an audio message waiting for him. It was left by EVA. When Snake played it, EVA explained that from the beginning she was a Chinese-American spy sent by the Chinese People's Liberation Army to get the Legacy back for China. The two NSA code breakers who defected, ADAM and EVA, were actually both men. She originally planned on eliminating ADAM before meeting up with Snake, but the real ADAM never showed up. Since the renunciation of the Soviet Union in aiding China on nuclear weapons development in 1959, China's hydrogen bomb and space rocket projects had fallen behind. But now, with the Legacy and the data of the Shagohod, they would be able to catch up and surpass those of the U.S. and USSR. Snake clenched his



fist, infuriated by the deception. However, this fury soon turned to mere confusion as he found that the microfilm EVA claimed to have stolen was still in his pocket.

Briefly distracted, he tossed the microfilm aside, and kept listening to the message. EVA herself was an agent of the Philosophers, trained in one of their charm schools so she could fool everyone. The only person she couldn't fool, was The Boss. The Boss used to be an instructor for the Philosophers, so she could easily see through EVA's disguise. EVA was supposed to kill Snake, but she couldn't. Because she made a promise to The Boss. EVA went on to explain the true meaning of The Boss's last mission. She didn't betray her country. She died for her country. The whole mission was staged by the U.S. government so they could get their hands on the Legacy and destroy the Shagohod. Everything was going according to plan.



However, when Volgin fired the Davy Crockett, everything changed. Rather than give up on the mission to obtain the Legacy, the mission itself was greatly expanded and revised. The Boss wouldn't be allowed to come back home alive. And she wouldn't be allowed to kill herself. Her life would be ended by Snake. That was the mission she was given and she had no choice but to carry it out. In America, she would be seen as a despicable traitor.

And in the Soviet Union, she would be seen as a monster who unleashed a nuclear catastrophe. She would go down in official history as a war criminal. And no one would ever understand her, except for her last pupil. EVA rode away on a Triumph motorcycle, and the message Snake listened to self-destructed by the time he heard all of this.

Snake was arranged to see President Lyndon B. Johnson. Johnson awarded Snake the title of Big Boss as well as the Distinguished Service Cross. Big Boss reluctantly shook his hand and turned away. The CIA Director offered his hand, but Big Boss left, devastated. He even refused to speak or shake hands with Major Zero and the crew. A DOD Official approached the CIA Director and proposed that they make 'an infiltration unit like FOX in the Army.'



Visiting Arlington National Cemetery, Big Boss laid flowers on The Boss's grave, alongside her gun, the Patriot. The grave reads: 'In Memory of a Patriot, Who Saved the World.' Big Boss stood, and saluted, with tears rolling down his face... The Boss's debriefing would endure only in his heart, and in his memory of her.

Later, Ocelot contacted the KGB Chief Director to inform him of both Groznyj Grad's and the Granin research facility's destruction. He also revealed that Khrushchev was finished and that the KGB's time had finally arrived. He also hinted that the KGB could use the knowledge of both the Virtuous Mission and Operation Snake Eater to blackmail America during further negotiations, as America was expecting the Soviets to keep a lid on the events from leaking out. Ocelot concluded the conversation by assuring the Chief Director that he would keep the KGB informed on any further developments. However, shortly thereafter, he made a telephone call to the DCI. He stated that the copy of the Philosophers' Legacy handed to EVA was a fake and that the real Legacy had made its way back to America. However, Ocelot also explained that only half of the Legacy made it to America, and he might try to risk detection by stealing it from the KGB (whom he suspected had the other half). He also confirmed that the Shagohod had been destroyed, and that The Boss had used the remaining Davy Crockett to obliterate Groznyj Grad. He then revealed that he had obtained blueprints relating to Metal Gear from Granin, shortly before his death, which might work in America's favor when the time came. Ocelot had been acting as a triple spy, and was in fact the real ADAM, working for the CIA as well as for Volgin. He was also an agent of the Philosophers, and he planned on using the Legacy to revive their American faction. He then ended the call to the DCI by confirming that he was still at the CIA's disposal.



Metal Gear Solid: Portable Ops

Developer	Kojima Productions
Publisher	Konami
Director	Masahiro Yamamoto
Producer	Hideo Kojima Noriaki Okamura
Artist	Yoji Shinkawa Ashley Wood Kyoko Hariyama
Writer	Gakuto Mikumo Satoshi Hirano Hideo Kojima
Composer	Akihiro Honda Norihiko Hibino Takahiro Izutani
Platform	PlayStation Portable
Release date	December 5, 2006



Six years after the events of Operation Snake Eater, Naked Snake’s former team, FOX, has broken their allegiance with the CIA and gone renegade. Snake himself is also targeted by the FOX unit, which sent renegade FOX unit soldiers to attack and capture him. Snake is tortured and interrogated by one of the members of FOX, Lieutenant Cunningham, who’s trying to locate the whereabouts of the missing half of the Philosophers’ Legacy, with the United States Government having already acquired the other half of the Legacy from the Soviet Union at the conclusion of Operation Snake Eater. Snake is imprisoned in a cell next to Roy Campbell, the sole survivor of an American Green Beret team sent in to investigate the base. Snake learns through Campbell that they’re on the San Hieronymo Peninsula, the site of an abandoned Soviet missile silo in Colombia.

The two escape and Snake makes his way to a communications base, where he attempts to contact his old CO, Major Zero. Instead, he is greeted by his old FOX comrades Para-Medic and Sigint, who reveal that Snake and Zero are being accused of instigating the revolt and that the only way for Snake to clear their name is to find and apprehend the leader of the rebellion, Gene. To complicate matters, Gene has also convinced most of the Russian soldiers stationed on the base to join their side by simply taking over the chain of command of a former Red Army unit, that was secretly stationed inside the Colombian territory. In order to complete his mission, Snake must persuade enemy soldiers to join his ranks.

1970 San Hieronymo Incident

Six years after the events of Operation Snake Eater, Naked Snake's former unit, FOX, broke their allegiance with the CIA and went renegade. Snake himself was targeted by the FOX unit, which sent armed soldiers to attack and capture him.

Imprisonment

Twelve hours after being captured and drugged, Snake awoke in a prison cell on the San Hieronymo Peninsula, Colombia, where he was tortured by FOX's interrogation specialist, Lieutenant Cunningham. Cunningham was attempting to locate the whereabouts of the missing half of the Philosophers' Legacy, which had disappeared at the conclusion of Operation Snake Eater. He explained that the United States Government had already acquired one half of the Legacy from the Soviet Union and that they suspected Snake of having stolen the other (missing) half.

Snake managed to escape imprisonment with the help of fellow prisoner, Roy Campbell, the sole survivor of an American Green Beret team sent in to investigate the



peninsula. Campbell, upon recognizing Snake as 'Big Boss,' commented that he had become a legend in the Black Ops world, and explained to him that the peninsula was the site of an abandoned Soviet missile silo. The Soviets had created the base in secret after helping the FARC rebels in 1964, having failed to establish missile sites in Cuba during the Cuban Missile Crisis; however, the base's construction was abandoned during détente, when the SALT limited each country's ballistic missile supply and eliminated the Soviet's need for a new missile base. Campbell's Green Berets were prompted to investigate after the base had recently become active again, but the FOX Unit ambushed them, capturing Campbell and eliminating the rest. Snake attempted to free him, but his cell required a special key. Campbell told Snake to go to the communications base to send out an SOS signal via an encrypted message.

Snake then attempted to contact his old commanding officer, Major Zero, but was instead greeted by his old FOX comrades Para-Medic and Sigint. They revealed that he and Zero were being accused of instigating the FOX revolt, as well as stealing a prototype weapon from the military one

month earlier. Zero had therefore been placed under arrest by the military for treason. The only way for Snake to clear their names would be to find and apprehend the leader of the rebellion, whose identity was currently unknown. The FOX unit had also complicated matters by bringing the remaining Red Army soldiers under their control. Sigint suggested that Snake try to accomplish the mission by recruiting some of the soldiers himself. After returning to the detention center to free Campbell, Snake informed him of the situation. He also asked Campbell if he was willing to help, but he declined due to a broken leg and fever. Snake then asked him if he'd drive a stolen truck for them, to which he agreed, and the pair reviewed what they should do first. According to Campbell's briefing, the Green Beret's first recon target was to be a Soviet patrol base. He knew where it was located, but was unfamiliar with the rest of the base.

Snake proceeded to infiltrate the patrol base, where he overheard two soldiers discussing a weapon that was supposedly powerful enough to obliterate every major city in Russia. He managed to steal some secret documents, confirming that FOX was planning to use this secret weapon against Russia, and containing outline details of a launch plan. Snake was in disbelief, and thought that even if the launch plan was real, it was a bluff to strengthen their hand. In the end, he and Campbell were forced to assume that it was true and that it would spark a world crisis.

The fact that there were only two of them against both the Red Army and FOX didn't sit well with them. Campbell asked Snake if he had noticed any of the Red Army soldiers having negative thoughts about their commander, leading Campbell to decide that they should attempt to recruit the soldiers to their side. Campbell also informed Snake of the name of the FOX commander: Gene.

To Arms

Snake quickly captured a Soviet soldier, named Jonathan. After regaining consciousness, Jonathan attempted an escape by grabbing Campbell's pistol, but, before he could shoot, Snake pinned him down. Complimenting him on his recovery and quick thinking, Snake introduced himself, telling him that he was just a soldier, neither with the Americans nor with FOX, and that they were here to stop the FOX rebellion. Their mission was to free the soldiers on the peninsula from Gene's control, and apprehend the traitors in the FOX unit. Campbell asked if he was willing to join, but Jonathan laughed at this, and informed the pair that they rebelled not because Gene made them, but because their country had betrayed them. The Red Army soldiers had spent years on the peninsula without contact due to the secrecy of their mission, and without decent food in a harsh climate. Many

had died, but they stayed believing their efforts would benefit Russia. Instead, they were repaid by being 'stabbed in the back.' Campbell, deducing that Jonathan was referring to the policy shift in the Kremlin, commented that if the existence of the base was revealed, Moscow's position in the SALT program would be compromised. Jonathan replied that his unit didn't care about political rationales; they were forced to stay, making it seem as though it was the work of a few out of control soldiers. They



turned to Gene because he wanted to make a nation not of soldiers, but for them, and that they were loyal to Gene because of their belief that he would deliver them justice, and the only thing they feared was losing that justice. Snake told him that a professional soldier never brings justice to a mission, politics are fickle, and that the only ones who need a reason to fight are those who fight for a living. He cited The Boss's sacrifice as how he knew this. Jonathan, realizing that Snake was Big Boss, the hero who defeated Colonel Volgin at Groznyj Grad, was amazed, and finally decided to join them.

Afterwards, Campbell's condition worsened and the group realized that he may have contracted malaria. The preventive drugs they had weren't working, so Snake sneaked back into the communications base to contact Para-Medic. She came to the conclusion that the malaria bug Campbell had may be of a type that the drugs had no effect on, but luckily one of the recruited soldiers knew the location of a hospital, which had recently received a suspiciously large shipment. After making their way there they soon discovered the drugs had been used up, and the only thing that remained was a shipment of materials headed for a lab north of the hospital. Meanwhile, Cunningham had discovered that Snake and Campbell had escaped, and ordered a search team to find them. Accompanying FOX commander Gene onboard Cunningham's chopper, the psychic Ursula caught sight of Snake from afar, causing him to take cover. Tailing the chopper, Snake's group found the research lab where they observed Cunningham, Gene and Ursula. Gene spoke to Ursula about the status of a soldier named Null, until both sensed that something was amiss. Their predictions proved correct when scaffolding that the soldiers were working on for a heliport collapsed right in front of them. One soldier was injured and tried to apologize, though Gene forgave his error and had him sent to the hospital. He apologized to the other soldiers for making it seem as though the work was more important than the soldiers' well being, and expressed that the age of soldiers being treated as tools was coming to an end.

Sneaking into the research lab proper, Snake came across a culture tank containing a sedated young soldier, who he appeared to recognize. He was soon discovered by a woman who he believed to be Ursula, though she helped him to hide from the FOX soldiers that were searching for him. After they left, she introduced herself as Elisa, Ursula's twin sister, with Snake asking if she was a member of FOX. Elisa replied that she was simply a medic, and that it was her sister who was with FOX, warning him



that Ursula was one of the most powerful psychics in all the Communist world. Enquiring about the soldier in the culture tank, Snake was told that it was the 'Perfect Soldier,' known as Null. Incapable of emotions or doubts, the Perfect Soldier's emotions would be reset after every mission and his senses honed to razor sharpness. Elisa then handed Snake a package containing the treatment for the malaria, and telling him to head for the harbor to find what he was looking for. Before Snake left Elisa then warned him that if he ever saw Ursula in front of him, he should shoot. If he couldn't do that, he was already dead.

Diversiory Ops

Now free from malaria, the group decided to set up a spy unit to find any leads that would lead them to the harbor. Sending units to the supply depot, they quickly discovered the location of a map detailing cargo shipment routes. The group's sneaking unit retrieved the document which also revealed the locations of the town, rail bridge and the security base. However, Campbell discovered that the rail bridge that they needed to cross to reach the harbor, had been closed off and turned into a checkpoint. Snake decided that, instead of pushing through head on, it would be better to make diversions elsewhere: by blowing up enemy facilities or landmarks, forces would need to be pulled from the bridge in order to help out elsewhere. Snake snuck back into the supply depot to steal some TNT while the spy units located places within various facilities that, if destroyed, would cause a sufficient distraction: trucks in the supply depot and town; an armory in the Soviet patrol base; and the culture tank, used to house the Perfect Soldier, in the research lab. After destroying some of these targets, Snake and his unit headed to the rail bridge to cross to the other side of the peninsula.

Successfully infiltrating a cargo ship docked in the harbor, Snake observed a Soviet officer speaking to a man that he recognized: an old war buddy of his from Vietnam, codenamed Python, whom Snake had long

thought dead. The drunken officer, Colonel Skowronski, was upset at Python for disturbing his warplane collection, and taking command of 'his' base. Python, however, was amused that Skowronski was in hiding, and couldn't even command his own unit anymore. Skowronski attempted to shoot him with his AK-47, but the bullets became frozen



and halted before they could hit him. Skowronski screamed in horror, accusing Python of being a monster. Python took Skowronski's gun in his hand and, froze it solid, using liquid nitrogen ejected from his special suit. He threw Skowronski into a cell and froze the lock. After Python left, Snake approached Skowronski, who explained that he had lost the chain of command to Gene, and with it, his entire platoon in the past four weeks. Gene was using greed and fear to get the soldiers to 'dance to his tune.' Snake comments on the Lavotchkin La-5 that Skowronski had aboard the ship, who responded that if he had a MiG or a Sukhoi he would kill Gene, laughing maniacally. Snake shoots the ice lock on the cell, and continues on his mission.

Snake eventually finds a crate with U.S. markings and deduces that this must be what they were looking for. However, most of the crates were empty, but some still had spare parts left behind, most notably: 'HEAT rounds for a recoilless cannon, spare barrels for an M1919, and bulletproof armor close to five inches (12.7cm) thick.' Campbell comments that these are all parts for a tank or armored vehicle. Snake, then received a call from someone calling himself 'Prividyenie,' or 'Ghost' in English. Ghost thanked Snake for taking care of Volgin, much to Snake's surprise, and asked if he remembered Sokolov's Shagohod, leading Snake to conclude that the prototype weapon could be a nuclear tank. Remembering that the Shagohod could only fire a single IRBM, and couldn't possibly hit every major city in Russia from the peninsula, Ghost reminded Snake that America had already successfully developed MIRV, a single ballistic missile capable of carrying multiple nuclear warheads, and able to strike several different locations.

This new nuclear weapon though, made up for the drawbacks of conventional MIRVs, by being able to launch into an enemy country and completely neutralize it all by itself, with no support required. The weapon was much smaller and more mobile than the Shagohod, reminding Snake of Granin and his Metal Gear concept. Ghost concluded that this 'Metal Gear', was a small walking tank, able to launch multiple small nuclear warheads and Gene was planning to arm it

with Soviet nukes. However, he assured Snake that it was still in preparation stages. He commented that a government official must have helped FOX to steal the weapon and was most likely hiding at the airport. Ghost then gave Snake his radio frequency and told him that he was counting on him to stop Metal Gear.



Python

After deploying more spies to the peninsula, the group stole documents that helped to identify the location of the warhead storage facility. Campbell decided that instead of sending in a spy unit first, and with the knowledge that a transport team will arrive to pick the nukes up soon, they infiltrate the facility immediately. Upon finding the facility's power generator, the group planted explosives to destroy it, so as to render the main elevator, used for moving the nukes from the lower floor, inoperable. The TNT, however, failed to explode, due to Python freezing the detonator. He emerged from the shadows, criticizing Snake for his recklessness, since the explosion would have been too powerful, and blocked off his only escape route in the process. Python revealed that he had survived their top secret mission in Vietnam, though his body had lost the ability to regulate its temperature. Without the suit he wore, which was filled with liquid nitrogen, his body temperature would rise uncontrollably. The CIA kept him alive so they could use him against Big Boss because



they feared him, training him as an 'Anti-Snake' soldier. He had been issued wetwork missions so as to keep his assassination skills sharp, which caused him to suffer from nightmares relating to every single person he had been ordered to kill. Python then cocked his rifle, and demanded that he and Snake fight. After an intense battle, Python fell to the floor, amazed at Snake's abilities and remarking that he 'won't have to take another life.' He told Snake that he had followed Gene because he had promised redemption but realized that 'soldiers can't find redemption in the 'good of a nation' or in the 'hatred of an enemy.' Soldiers need heroes, for whom they would gladly risk their lives.' Python asked Snake if he could bear the burden of holding his men's lives in his own hands.

Regrouping, Snake's unit realized that they failed to stop the transportation of the nukes, and that the only option left was destroy Metal Gear itself. Fortunately, there were only a few places on the base that a weapon of Metal Gear's size could be housed, and more people would likely know of its location. Snake remembered Ghost's words about the government official who helped sneak Metal Gear out of America, and that he may still be at the base's Airport, which they were able to locate after receiving visual confirmation of several aircraft. Snake and his sneaking unit quickly made their way inside the Airport, located the government official and interrogated him. It wasn't long before the official gave away the location of a missile silo, located east of the ravine.

Infiltrating the silo entrance, the group attempted to locate a way into the main complex. As they closed in on the entrance, an alarm was raised, and the perfect soldier, Null, was released to confront the intruders. Snake attempted to shoot him, but Null deflected the bullets with his machete. After a long fight, Null asked Snake why he still lived, since no other man had faced the perfect soldier and



survived, and remarked that Snake was different. As Null screamed in pain, Snake began to realize that he had met the young soldier before, but his thoughts were cut short by the arrival of Cunningham and his men, who knocked Snake unconscious. Cunningham then ordered Null to stand down, telling him his mission was complete.

Rescue Effort

Campbell informed the men that they had lost contact with Snake, but assured them that the legendary Big Boss would not let himself be killed easily. They initiated a plan to interrogate the men at the silo entrance, Snake's last known whereabouts, to try and find out anything that could lead them to him. After interrogating an enemy officer, they discover that Snake was being held in the guest house.

Meanwhile, Snake himself received further interrogation by Gene and Cunningham. Gene remarked that information extraced via physical torture was unreliable, with Cunningham replying that to Snake, the pain he was experiencing didn't even qualify as torture. Cunningham suggested using truth serum on him, to which Gene remarked that information extracted via truth serum was also unreliable, before questioning Cunningham's methods and asking him why he was in such a hurry. Cunningham assured Gene it was because he was working from an efficiency point of view. Gene accepted this, but under the condition he be allowed a moment to talk with Snake alone.

Gene questioned Snake on his loyalty, and asked what he was fighting for, telling him that once someone has inherited the soul of a warrior, they can never leave the battlefield. Gene went on to reveal that the whole Metal Gear hijacking was a set-up. He explained that

while the Soviet Union's planned economy had failed, and their finances in shambles, thanks to the loss of the Philosophers' Legacy, America had succeeded in deploying MIRVs in battle, and was moving to cement its military superiority through SALT. The global balance of power would soon tip heavily in America's favor, and with it, the CIA's importance would diminish. So the CIA planned on giving Metal Gear, a weapon far more advanced than any MIRV, to the Russians as a valuable trump card, continuing the age of soldiers and spies. FOX's orders from the CIA were to steal Metal Gear during transport, then pretend to defect to the Soviet Union. Snake, refused to believe it, but Gene continued, saying just as soldiers needed talented officers, men needed talented leaders, and he was created for that purpose. The Successor Project, which created Gene, was a top secret US project designed to create the perfect battlefield commander, giving him 'the skills to wage war, the aptitude for strategy, the endurance to return from battle alive, and the charisma to overwhelm and master the hearts of soldiers.' The soldier they chose to use as a model leader was The Boss herself. Gene commented that he and Snake were like brothers, and told him that he was about to witness the birth of a new world.

Realizing that it would be difficult to find the guest house, Campbell sent out the spy unit to gather intel. After discovering that there was a map detailing the way

to the guest house at the rail bridge, and that government officials in the town might know the way, Campbell ordered the sneaking unit to infiltrate and interrogate the men to get further info, as well as steals map.

Later, Gene spoke on the telephone to Major Ocelot of GRU, who informed him that negotiations with the Kremlin were a success, and that they would not interfere with his plans, having seen Metal Gear's trajectory data. Gene thanked him, and proceeded to question who had helped him obtain the data, before shrugging it off and commenting that he had a good idea who it was: 'the man with the same codename as Null.' Gene asked Ocelot if he knew that he would be betraying his employer, and concluded the conversation by saying they would meet again one day, in a world of Gene's creation. Shortly thereafter, two soldiers charged into the room, before being cut down by Null, who was in pursuit. Null demanded to know where Snake was, since, in his eyes, he was still alive and he had therefore not completed his mission. Gene took down Null and ordered for him to be taken back to the preparation chamber. Gene was impressed: Null had his memories reset after every mission, but his battle with Snake had left such a strong impression on him that he could not forget it.

As Snake laid in his cell, Elisa persuaded the guard to leave and give her some time alone with Snake, explaining that 'sometimes she longs for a strong man.' Once inside, she expressed surprise that Snake was able to fight Null and survive, and gave him some food to eat. She then embraced Snake, and communicated to him telepathically, so that the guard would not hear, warning him that she was not strong enough to talk for very long. She informed him that Gene was preparing to launch Metal Gear, with Snake replying that it was too early, and asking if negotiations had broken down. Elisa responded that not even she nor Ursula could tell what was going through Gene's mind. She continued, saying she thought Gene might launch Metal Gear, no matter how the negotiations turned out. She informed Snake that they had moved Metal Gear from the harbor to the assembly plant in order to load it with nuclear warheads and that now was the perfect time to destroy it. Snake wondered why she was telling him this, to which she responded that she had a vision of him destroying Metal Gear and that he had the chance to stop a nuclear holocaust. She lets go, visibly exhausted from using her energy to communicate with Snake, just as the guard returned, asking her to wrap things up. As she left, she turned to Snake and whispered 'Please, Snake... You have to believe.'

After making their way to the guest house, the sneaking unit, led by Jonathan, managed to find Snake. He questioned why they would risk their own lives to save him, especially considering they didn't even know for sure if he was still alive, to which Jonathan responded that he was their Boss and they needed him, and he shouldn't forget it. Snake, his spirit lifted, told them that he knew where Metal Gear was, and it was time that they finished this. Jonathan assured him the area ahead was only lightly guarded, but as they advanced they were ambushed by Cunningham. Cunningham applauded Snake, telling him that he led capable men, but that thanks to Ursula, they would not slip through his fingers. Cunningham questioned Snake again on the whereabouts of the Legacy, saying he knew that Snake stole the KGB's half. After Snake once again denied any knowledge of the Legacy's whereabouts, Cunningham began to shoot Snake's men until he changed his mind, letting slip that he knew Snake had it because the Pentagon had told him so. Snake questioned his stake in the operation, but as Cunningham prepared to shoot more of the men, a truck driven by Elisa barged in, ramming into Cunningham's hover-platform and sending him flying. Snake, gathering his wounded comrades, climbed aboard, and Elisa sped off.

Elisa

After returning to the group's camp, Elisa asked Snake to follow her, as the night would make finding the assembly plant easier for them, due to its lights. As they walked through the woods, Snake asked Elisa why she decided to betray Gene and help him. She told him that she was grateful for what Gene had done for her and Ursula; rescuing them from being used as guinea pigs in East Germany. The Communists and Americans were the same in wanting to unlock the secret of their ESP, but in the end, she betrayed Gene because she believed that 'no one should be allowed to use nuclear warheads.' She revealed that her and Ursula's parents were killed in the accident at the Kyshtym facility, and it was the after ef-



fects of this that gave them their ESP. Elisa suffered from nightmares about the incident, seeing the ashes of death raining around her. Snake consoled her, saying that he had been exposed too, at Bikini Atoll. After Elisa said that she knew, he asked her if that was why she helped him. She said that that was probably the reason, but she also

thought that he would make a great father someday, and she was unable to have children of her own. Snake told her that he would never be a father.

They then approached the perimeter of the assembly plant, Snake asking if it was where they were storing Metal Gear. She said that she believed so, but Snake sensed that something wasn't right, as personnel were still working late into the night. Since Null was still undergoing readjustments, with Elisa gone he wouldn't be deployed for another few days, thus making it the perfect chance to investigate. Snake felt that the only person he had to worry about was Cunningham, but Elisa revealed that Gene was more of a threat, because the Successor Project was also designed to create a battle commander capable of commanding the Perfect Soldier. She had never actually seen Gene fight, but she suspected that he had even faster reflexes than Null, not to mention that his very battle technique was patterned after the Boss herself. After revealing her fear of Gene, Elisa explained that her sister foresaw that Snake would plunge the world into fear, but she saw him destroying Metal Gear; the one time their visions weren't one and the same, hence why she believed in Snake.

RAXA

After arriving back at camp, Campbell delivered the news to the group that they had finally discovered the location of Metal Gear. It was currently being loaded with nuclear warheads at the assembly plant, and was extremely vulnerable. They proceeded to infiltrate the plant and enter Metal Gear's deployment station. Elisa urged Snake to hurry up and to start planting the explosives, but unfortunately Gene's army discovered them before they got the chance. The guards apprehended Snake, but Metal Gear suddenly became active and fired on Gene's position. While successfully killing several of Gene's men, it failed to actually hit Gene himself, who seemed to avoid the bullets without appearing to move. The pilot revealed himself to be Colonel Skowronski, who was amazed at the power of Metal Gear and attempted to wipe out all the 'turncoats at the base' along with Gene. However, Metal Gear stopped firing unexpectedly before he could even aim at Gene again. Snake used this distraction to his advantage, holding Gene at gunpoint and telling him to order his men to drop their weapons. Gene, however, decided to play his trump card and ordered Ursula to 'awaken'. Elisa began struggling, shouting at Snake to shoot her before Ursula awakened. Confused, Snake hesitated, and Ursula was able to 'awaken', revealing herself and Elisa's to be the same person. Ursula told Snake that she would kill him before he could spawn his 'accursed snake children', and effortlessly pushed him aside using psychokinesis. Gene explained that her split

personality was a side effect of her powers being artificially augmented, and that a greater percentage of their overall powers belonged to Ursula's personality, at the expense of her emotions. He also revealed that she could more than make up for Metal Gear's shortcomings by enhancing its movements beyond its full potential, causing it to behave in an animal-like manner. Skowronski was then thrown



from Metal Gear, and Ursula descended into the cockpit, preparing to attack Snake and his unit. Gaining advice from Ghost over the radio, Snake attacked the weak points in its legs with the RPG-7 and TNT. Toppling over, Ursula continued to pursue Snake, causing Metal Gear to crawl towards him, attacking with its now-exposed missile pods. Avoiding the incoming missiles, Snake used the RPG to destroy the pods, desperately warning 'Elisa' to get clear, but Metal Gear exploded, apparently killing her.

While Snake mourned over what happened, Gene's men gave up the will to fight, since without Metal Gear, they could never build their nation. Gene congratulated Snake on his defeat of Metal Gear RAXA with Ursula at its helm, realizing

now why Snake had caught Ocelot's eye. Snake demanded to know what Ocelot had to do with the situation, but Gene simply laughed, and told Snake that he was a fascinating man. Snake ordered him to surrender, since he could no longer carry out a nuclear attack. However, Gene implied that the destruction of RAXA wasn't what Snake thought it was. Snake was then contacted by Ghost, who confirmed Gene's claim, telling Snake that it was not over, and what he had destroyed wasn't the ballistic launch Metal Gear, it was merely a test model for performance evaluation. Ghost then stepped into the hangar in person and revealed his true identity: Nikolai Stepanovich Sokolov.

After the initial shock of seeing him alive, Snake then realized that Sokolov would naturally know about Granin's Metal Gear, since they were in competition when he originally designed the Shagohod. Sokolov explained that he was still grateful to Gene for rescuing him from a Russian prison camp, and reuniting him with his family for a short time. However, despite his gratitude, he simply could not bear to see his creation, Metal Gear, be launched against his native country. Gene then reminded him that he was a Soviet rocket scientist who defected to the United States, and that one day the United States would, indeed use Metal Gear against the Soviet Union. As Sokolov stood speechless, helicopters passed overhead, transporting a large machine. Snake realized that it was the real Metal Gear, and that Ursula had bought the time necessary for it to be taken away. Snake once again demanded that Gene to stop.

Daring him to pull the trigger, he warned Snake that the future may not be the one he wanted to face, after inheriting the title of 'Boss'. Gene then told everyone that the Cold War would soon end, but that did not mean that peace would come afterwards. He mentioned that as the hate died down, and the gap between rich and poor widened, nuclear weapons would spread across the world upon being stolen from the superpowers stockpiles, and that today's ally could be tomorrow's enemy or even worse, people in the same countries would kill each other. He asked his soldiers if any of them could say for certain that tomorrow they wouldn't end up pointing their rifles at their neighbors, comrades, or even families. Snake yelled for Gene to stop, but he continued to invoke fear and paranoia within the soldiers minds with his specially-enhanced voice. Gene claimed that an enemy was standing right in their midst, and began asking which of them it was. He then says he has found the 'enemy,' throwing a dagger at one of his men, and causing him to begin shooting. Suddenly, a riot broke out between Gene's soldiers, who began firing at one another. Snake desperately tried ordering them to cease fire, but it was no use, and he ended up being grazed on the arm. Gene then began to leave, having no more use for the base, since Metal Gear's launch was nearly ready. Snake cursed him for killing his own men, but Gene replied that they are perfectly capable of doing it themselves. Revealing his disgust towards humanity by claiming them to be foolish, fragile, and violent creatures, Gene told Snake to watch what humanity truly was. Suddenly, Jonathan dove in front of

Snake, as bullets were about to hit him, and was himself hit in the chest and head. As Gene departed for his helicopter, and Jonathan laid dying in his arms, Snake lifted his head up to the sky and yelled out in anguish, surrounded by the bodies of fallen soldiers.

After returning to the encampment, Snake and Campbell decided that they couldn't afford any more setbacks, and set up a spy unit at the silo entrance, to discover a way into the silo complex. Snake was still affected by the death of Jonathan. Half a day later, their spies managed to procure technical documents detailing the structural layout of the launch silo, specifically the gate entrance. The gate was impenetrable, so it couldn't be breached via normal means. However, the lock system of the gate used an electromagnet, so cutting the power would allow the gate to be unlocked manually until the auxiliary power came on. They therefore needed to sabotage the power substation before they could infiltrate the underground complex. After discovering the substation's location, to the south of the ravine, Snake immediately headed for the facility. After realizing that they didn't have enough explosives to destroy the entire complex, Campbell decided they could simply target the switchboard. They would be unable to make it back to the launch silo within five minutes however, so the group had the technical unit build a time bomb. After returning and placing the bomb on the switchboard, Snake attempted to leave, but on his way, encountered a grizzly site of several soldiers' corpses.



The Frank Hunter

Snake heard a slicing sound and a man screaming, and realized that Null was present. The soldiers were confused as to why the Perfect Soldier had been deployed, since he was still supposed to be undergoing readjustment. After killing several more of them, Null sensed Snake behind him, and asked why he was still alive. He explained to Snake that he used to have dreams about his allies saving him, but when he woke up, he had nothing, only the corpses of the men he'd killed lying in front of him. He continued, saying that everybody dies, either by crime, disease, accidents, or war, even if he wasn't the one to kill them. He didn't understand why Snake still lived, and didn't know what he hoped to accomplish by living. Null suddenly attacked, but Snake was able to block him. Finally realizing who he was fighting, Snake told Null that he knew who he was, and that they had met back in Mozambique, four years ago. Null had been a child soldier fighting in a guerilla group in the struggle for independence. There, he had killed dozens of government soldiers with a single knife, as he threw them off guard with the innocent frankness of a young boy, and then preyed on them with the cold cruelty of a hunter. Because the boy spoke a little German, both comrades and enemies referred to him as Frank Jaeger, 'The Frank Hunter.' As Null began to remember this name, Snake tried to convince him not to fight with FOX, that allies could be found somewhere else. Null refused, however, claiming that because he was The Perfect Soldier,

and where he existed, no other soldiers existed, he didn't need a name. He then declared himself to be Null, and that after he killed Snake, he could go back to being Null. He then fought Snake, and after an intense duel, Snake managed to defeat him. Null, now reasserting his identity of Frank Jaeger, knelt down to Snake, and said that he remembered now who he was, and that even back then, Snake had managed to stop him. He took off his mask revealing his face for the first time to Snake. He told him how adults had raised him to be a tool of war, but that Snake had defeated him and watched over him. Snake then apologized for what happened as he thought he had placed him in a safe place when he took him to a rehab center. He had no idea that he would be subjected to the Perfect Soldier project, and immediately held the Philosophers responsible. Frank Jaeger then forgave Snake, as he helped to fill the void in him, and that he would always be there to save him. Snake then helped him back to the group's base camp, as it was nearly time to take the power grid offline.

Cunningham

After reaching the entrance to the launch silo, the bomb at the power station detonated, giving Snake five minutes to reach the gate within. He successfully infiltrated the complex, eventually reaching a freight elevator leading to the launch area. However, after beginning his ascent, Cunningham appeared atop his flying platform. Surprisingly, he wasn't waiting there to attack him or even interrogate him. He hadn't thought that Snake would make it this far, and that 'he' had been right about Snake. Cunningham told him that he had no reason to fight anymore, as his mission was already complete. Snake was confused, so Cunningham explained that he didn't answer to Gene, nor the CIA, but actually the U.S. Department of Defense. He asked Snake if he had noticed that the CIA and the Pentagon weren't on the best of terms. The Pentagon brass had become worried over the CIA's growing influence in military affairs, due to events such as the Bay of Pigs Invasion in 1961, the covert operations in North Vietnam, and even the creation of Metal Gear. They had arranged for Gene to steal Metal Gear and launch it into Russia so that the CIA's reputation would be tarnished and the United States military would take charge again. Snake called him out on the madness of the plan, as it would end up starting a nuclear war. Cunningham then revealed that as far as the world was concerned, Gene was a renegade, and the fundamental design of both Metal Gear and its missiles were Soviet made, so they wouldn't even think of blaming Washington, and there would be no

evidence left behind anyway. He then revealed that he had a Soviet-made Davy Crockett missile launcher with him, which he intended to use against the missile base as soon as Gene launched Metal Gear. When Snake asked him about the fates of the other soldiers, Cunningham laughed and



replied that he didn't care what happened, since they were their enemies. He added that Snake was different though, and that he had followed the 'script' of the mission that 'he' and the Pentagon wrote for him down to the letter. The real reason that Snake had been sent to the San Hieronymo Peninsula was because they knew that the legendary Big Boss would throw a wrench into Gene's plan; he would sneak into the missile base alone, recruit the rebels to his side, and force Gene to launch Metal Gear. The entire mission was part of the Pentagon's plan, and since they didn't want Snake interfering further, Cunningham attempted to convince Snake to head up to the heliport at the top of the base and get onto a waiting chopper. After Metal Gear was launched as planned, Snake would be sent back to the United States, and be hailed as a hero yet again, though it wouldn't be the CIA congratulating him this time.

Having heard enough, Snake pointed his pistol at Cunningham, who inquired if Snake was still blinded by his loyalty to the CIA. He asked what they had ever done for the FOX unit, citing the fact that they were sent on brutal missions, and when he lost his leg, he was confined to a desk job. They had also sent the Boss, the Mother of Special Forces, to a foreign land to die. With Snake refusing to lower his gun, Cunningham then asked if he was doing it for the Russian soldiers on the Peninsula, calling it pathetic. He announced that he wouldn't let Snake through, and that he should go back. Snake replied that he simply could not allow the use of Metal Gear, and that he was doing this out of loyalty to himself, refusing to live his life the way The Boss did. Cunningham laughed at this, declared Snake to be a traitor, and attacked. After a difficult fight with Cunningham, Snake was able to significantly damage Cunningham's flying platform. Cunningham laments Snake's decision, since if he had followed his suggestion, both of them would have received the highest awards that any soldier could dream of. However, he declared that he wouldn't die alone, and that he would take Snake with him, readying the Davy-Crockett. Snake yelled for him to stop, but before Cunningham could launch the warhead, the flying platform exploded, and the launcher flew from his hands. The platform fell and was obliterated, along with Cunningham.

Gene

Campbell reminded Snake that the preparations on Metal Gear were almost complete, and that he should stop the launch by any means necessary. Snake managed to reach the silo's control room, where he found Gene, standing among a number of corpses. Snake realized that the corpses were those of the Metal Gear engineers and accused Gene of having murdered them. However, Gene denied any involvement in their deaths, as they had chosen to commit suicide due to their crimes. Snake then asked if this 'crime' was the fact that this was all a Pentagon conspiracy, with Gene remarking that Cunningham was a poor fool for dying without realizing that he was just a puppet. Snake asked if it was in fact Gene who was the puppet, and pointed out that the Pentagon was trying to get rid of the CIA. Gene revealed that he already knew everything that would transpire, including the Pentagon's plans and that Cunningham would betray him. He only allowed it to happen so that he could utilize his real plan. He wouldn't be launching Metal Gear into the Soviet Union, and he speculated that the Pentagon was prepared for the possibility that Cunningham would fail to destroy the evidence, and would be meeting with the Red Army as they spoke. Because of this, even if he launched Metal Gear into the Soviet Union, it wouldn't trigger a war. He then revealed that he was actually going to launch Metal Gear at Virginia, USA, home to both the CIA headquarters at Langley, and the Pentagon: the twin lairs of the

Philosophers. Snake was horrified at this, with Gene explaining that chaos would spread at an unprecedented scale, and that the worst case scenario



would result in America ceasing to exist as a nation. The current world order would crumble and the fact that Metal Gear would be launched from a Soviet missile base would stir up international controversy, resulting in the Warsaw Pact crumbling and possibly facing armed conflict with NATO.

Snake demanded to know why Gene would do this. Gene replied that he wanted to free the world from the Philosophers influence, and create a new world order of his own design. His goal for making a nation for mercenaries may be real, but it wasn't to be on the San Hieronymo Peninsula. In fact, this nation would be an organization of shadows, lurking deep underground and intervening in conflicts all over the world. He intended to create what the Philosophers could not create with a superior breed of soldier, and that this organization would be the true 'Peninsula of the Dead.'

This organization would be known as 'Army's Heaven'. Gene explained that he would not allow the world to be a playground for abstract national interests or petty political gambits. He intended to use superior force of arms to enforce a superior force of will, thus making the world whole again, as this was his calling, as the Successor. Disgusted by this, Snake tells him that he was nothing more than a dictator, using fear to keep his soldiers in line, deceives his allies with words, exploiting those who looked up to him as a mentor and then throwing them away. He also told Gene that the nation he was building was no heaven for soldiers, and that the place they were looking for was outside Gene's 'Heaven.' Gene then told Snake that this was their calling, and it was all part of a greater mission. 'The individual wills



of individual soldiers are meaningless.' He told Snake that those who had no calling must be given one by those who did, and they must follow the teachings of a superior will, devoting themselves to a higher cause. They must pour their lives into the cause, just as The Boss once did, with Snake angrily remarking that Gene was full of himself and was

not worthy to speak The Boss's name. Deducing that Snake never knew the whole truth of The Boss's sacrifice, Gene told him that during the Virtuous Mission, Volgin did not destroy the Sokolov research facility of his own free will, but that it had actually been the work of America, and a single deviously cunning strategist. Snake demanded to know who set it up, but was ignored by Gene, who stated that The Boss had sacrificed herself for someone's will, a noble act. Saying that Snake does not need to know who was behind it, Gene said that the only thing he needed was a calling, and that he should join Gene, and receive it. Snake refused, with Gene remarking that he was a true soldier after all, and that it would be a shame that they wouldn't meet eye-to-eye.

Telling Snake that the time for talk was over, Gene proceeded to commence Metal Gear's launch, but as he pressed the button, the entire console mysteriously exploded. Gene was surprised at this, until he saw Elisa/Ursula. She smashed her way through the window, into the control room, with Gene demanding for 'Ursula' to stay out of his way. Ursula/Elisa then said that nuclear weapons should never be used, that they are terrible weapons, which cause the earth itself to suffer. She stated that she knew 'their pain, their suffering, their cries, their hatred'. Snake wondered if it was Ursula or Elisa who was speaking. Gene then threw a knife at Ursula/Elisa, which she effortlessly deflected. Knowing that she had read his thoughts, Gene realized that he had let his mental defences down when he

believed she had died. However, she could not keep track of body, and Gene charged towards Ursula/Elisa at impossible speed, stabbing her. Gene then left with Snake yelling for him to come back. Snake cradled the dying Ursula/Elisa in his arms, who tried to tell Snake that the trajectory data had already been input, and that there was a backup launch control in a nearby room. She revealed to Snake that their visions were one and the same, that Snake would destroy Metal Gear, and that he would build another in its place. One of his children would bring the world to ruin and that another would save it. Snake tried to ask her what she meant, but she fell silent, and he shouted her name. Realizing she had passed away, he then stood up and pursued Gene.

Snake rushed to the backup control room where Gene informed him that Metal Gear had already entered launch mode. The trajectory calculations and the target locations had already been set, and that no one could stop it, not even Snake should he defeat Gene. Knowing that Snake wouldn't give up without a fight, he revealed that he had his own reasons to fight Snake, which was to find out who the true successor to The Boss was. They then fought, with Snake constantly being plagued by Gene's telepathy, quoting the Boss at one point, and trying to cast doubt on Snake. Regardless, after an intense duel, Snake managed to defeat Gene. Gene expressed disbelief that a product of the Successor Project such as himself could be defeated by a man of flesh and blood like Snake. He then admitted that

Snake was the true successor after all, and that perhaps a story he had heard, concerning 'soldier genes,' was true after all. Snake then asked him how to stop the launch, but Gene replied that there was no way to prevent it now. He told Snake to escape, and handed him a microfilm, saying that it contained information on the equipment, personnel, and funding for Army's Heaven, gathered in secret. Snake then asked Gene why he was giving it to him, with Gene replying that he did it because they were the same. He told Snake that he would be glad to have them someday, and mentioned that it was their fate, telling him to go find his own calling. Gene then died.



ICBMG

Metal Gear was primed to launch and the silo opened up. Sokolov called Snake, telling him that the control panel had been locked out and that the countdown had begun. He mentioned that the rocket booster didn't have a post-ignition fuel control system, meaning that he couldn't stop Metal Gear after it was launched. Snake told Sokolov that he didn't care if he had to blow up the entire base, as long as it stopped the nuke. Sokolov revealed that he may have a chance at stopping the strike if he dismantled the Metal Gear unit itself, atop the rocket. He explained that Metal Gear was not the same as a nuclear missile, as it would be jettisoned from the booster at 3000 feet and parachute down to the ground, where it would release its payload of miniature nuclear missiles. By destroying Metal Gear before it launches, the nuclear strike could be averted, if not the actual launch. However, the designers had anticipated that such a possibility would occur, so they gave it armor thicker than a tank's. He also advised that Snake shouldn't try to destroy the rocket, lest he risk the destruction of the entire silo. Snake then raced out of the control room onto the launch pad, and used an RPG launcher to damage it. Though the RPG landed a direct hit, Metal Gear seemed to be unaffected. Suddenly, automatic weapons were fired at the Metal Gear with the bullets bouncing off for the most part. Snake looked up at the catwalks to see his fellow resistance members firing their weapons madly at Metal Gear. Snake yelled

that their weapons wouldn't work and that they should get out of there before they got caught up in the ignition blast and killed. Telling Snake that he had risked his life to save Russia, they replied that they were repaying him the favor by helping to save America, and for giving them a real reason to fight. Snake agreed and launched another RPG at Metal Gear just as it gained liftoff, knocking Snake off his feet. Sokolov attempted to contact Snake that



Metal Gear was in launch and that it was too late. However, as the rocket reached its second launch phase, it became apparent that the blows that Snake and his comrades had inflicted had caused structural damage, and the Metal Gear exploded upon reentry into the atmosphere. Sokolov attempted to contact Snake to tell him that Metal Gear had successfully been destroyed, and the pieces were falling back down to Earth, as well as the fact that the launch tubes had been sealed shut. However, he receives no answer.

Meanwhile, in Langley, the Director of Central Intelligence and two body guards proceeded down a hallway leading to a secret bunker. On the way, they encountered an unknown man, who expressed amazement that they would have a bunker right under the CIA, and that if FOX was still around, he would not have been able to sneak down there. He told the DCI that he had been sent to meet him, and introduced himself as ADAM. The DCI remembered him as the triple-agent for the Philosophers, and realized that he was Ocelot. Ocelot then told him that Metal Gear had already entered launch mode, and that the nuclear warheads would be arriving in thirty minutes. The DCI revealed that he was aware of this, and in fact was already on his way to the shelter, but that he couldn't leave behind certain documents, related to the Philosophers. The DCI mentioned that it contained a list of members, along with data and locations of portions of the Philosophers' Legacy stashed around the world. He added that even if America was destroyed, as long as he had them, then the Philosophers would be reborn. After hearing this Ocelot then shocked the DCI by shooting his accompanying men, and wondered if Ocelot planned to betray the Philosophers. Ocelot replies that he actually plans to end them, and that he would take back what the DCI 'stole' from them, and 'carry on the spirit of the true patriot.' Ocelot explained that it was part of a greater plan to make the world that The Boss envisioned a reality. He revealed that he had come to retrieve the other half of the Legacy, before shooting the DCI himself.

Comradery

Later, Snake disembarked from a C-141 Starlifter cargo plane that had landed back in the U.S., having survived Metal Gear's launch. He was greeted by Sigint, Para-Medic, and Major Zero where he received some official looking documents. He then looked beyond Major Zero and saw his comrades shuffling off another plane. They salute Snake, and he returned the gesture. Afterwards, he spoke with Roy Campbell over the phone, who was currently in hospital, and told him that he was almost fully recovered. Campbell informed him that Frank, the child soldier from Mozambique, was also doing fine, but that he was a mess, both physically and mentally. He also explained that after he was released, he was not sure what he should do, and that he may never be able to go back to leading a normal life. Snake told him that the whole incident was covered up, that he had actually been deployed to take down a soviet missile base, since it would be impossible to reveal to the public that the United States had come close to suffering a nuclear attack. Campbell told Snake not to feel so beat up about it, as he had done his country a great service. Snake then admitted that he didn't feel truly alive unless he was in battle, but that he needed to find a reason to fight. He needed to pass down what had been handed down to him. Campbell then wished him luck, and hoped that they would meet again someday. Afterwards, the documents Snake received earlier are revealed to contain official orders relating to the establishment of Unit FOXHOUND.

Meanwhile, Ocelot received a call from a mysterious man who he seemed to recognize. Apparently, this man was the one who fed Ocelot information. When asked how the DCI's death would be handled, Ocelot stated that it should pass as suicide, due to him feeling responsible for the theft of Metal Gear. He also mentioned that there would be a major shake-up on the seventh floor of Langley soon and that everything was going according to what he had planned. When asked about how the DCI reacted, Ocelot answered that when he saw the trajectory data, he brought the documents straight to him. He then agreed that they both should have known that Gene was serious about launching the nukes, and that Snake did well as their insurance plan. He then asked if his getting the Legacy was part of a script as well and that only 'he' would use Gene and FOX like that. Ocelot told him that he wouldn't be using him anymore. The mysterious man then mentioned about the battle data he had received from The Perfect Soldier, and mentioned to Ocelot about soldier genes that were related to it. Ocelot then became interested in helping him with his project, though only under the condition that they recruit Snake, so that they could become 'the Patriots'.



Metal Gear Solid: Peace Walker

Developer	Kojima Productions
Publisher	Konami
Director	Hideo Kojima
Producer	Hideo Kojima
Designer	Hideo Kojima
Artist	Yoji Shinkawa Ashley Wood
Writer	Hideo Kojima Shuyo Murata
Composer	Kazuma Jinnouchi Nobuko Toda Akihiro Honda
Platform	PlayStation Portable
Release date	April 29, 2010



The year is 1974. In Costa Rica, an unknown army of well-equipped soldiers has taken over the defenseless country. The soldiers have also brought along a nuclear warhead labeled 'Peace Walker', to set off their last nuclear warhead for deterrence, and demonstrate their power with the perfect deterrent. Big Boss is asked to save the country along with his Militaires Sans Frontières (Soldiers Without Borders). It is later learned that the soldiers that invaded the country are a rogue CIA unit, as well as the fact that the MSF's client, a University for Peace professor named Ramón Gálvez Mena, is actually an agent of the KGB. If Big Boss fights them then he will become an enemy of America. Eventually, Big Boss and his soldiers would come to be known as the founders of Outer Heaven.

1974 Peace Walker Incident

The Peace Walker Incident was a series of military skirmishes fought between the CIA Peace Sentinel and the Militaires Sans Frontières mercenary group in November 1974, mainly taking place within Central America. The incident concerned the development of the Peace Sentinel's Peace Walker Project and the MSF's efforts to prevent its completion.

Clients

Having left his military career in the U.S. behind him, Snake, a.k.a. Big Boss, founded the Militaires Sans Frontières, and stationed his troops on the Barranquilla Coast of Colombia. During a combat training session on November 4, 15:42, MSF subcommander Kazuhira Miller returned to their base camp with two visitors, reassuring Snake that they were not CIA and had not been followed.

Snake and Miller then met with the two guests in their office. Ramón Gálvez Mena, a distinguished scholar for the Costa Rican government, and his student, Paz Ortega Andrade, were seeking the MSF's help in repelling an unknown armed force that had entered their country.

The local authorities had claimed that they were a multinational security firm hired by the Developmental Corporation of Costa Rica, though Gálvez believed this to be false due their advanced weapons and equipment, hinting that 'la cia' may be involved. Since Costa Rica itself was unable to bear arms due to its peace constitution, Gálvez wished to hire the MSF as a deterrent, offering them a forward operating base off the coast of the Caribbean, and a chopper for transport, as payment. The government would also provide aid to them, unofficially.

Believing that military force was unlikely to solve the issue, and that the MSF were not simply 'dogs of war', Snake was reluctant to accept Gálvez's offer. Entering the



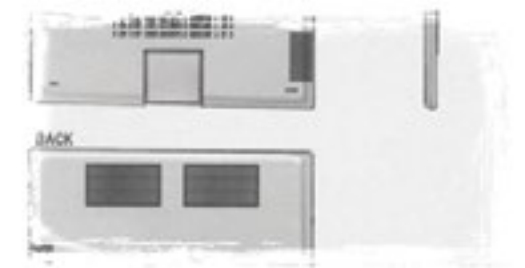
discussion, Paz proclaimed her overwhelming desire for peace in her country, revealing a passionate hatred for war, though Snake simply apologized to the young girl. A few days prior, Paz had been captured by the mysterious security company near a supply port north of Puerto Limon, while searching for a lost friend. She was subsequently imprisoned and tortured, though she was later able to

escape. After describing these events to Snake, Gálvez then stated that they were aware of his identity as Big Boss, which was why they had come to him.

At 20:31, after some further discussion away from the two visitors, Miller expressed the view that Gálvez's offer was an opportunity to expand the Militaires Sans Frontières and put down some roots, though Snake was not entirely convinced. The two also began to suspect that Gálvez was actually working for the KGB, and that by allying themselves with him, they'd be making an enemy of America. Confronted with this knowledge, Gálvez dropped his facade and explained of his mission: since the Soviets wished to establish a socialist stronghold in Central America, he had been ordered to hire the MSF to investigate the CIA's suspicious activities and force them out of Costa Rica. Having concealed any KGB affiliation from Paz, Gálvez played back a tape cassette that her friend had recorded prior to their capture. Snake was shocked to hear the voice of his supposedly deceased mentor, The Boss, to which Gálvez confirmed from voiceprint analysis. With Gálvez threatening to burn the tape, using the cigarette lighter from his prosthetic right hand, Snake finally relented, though he claimed he would be doing it for Paz.

The Spear

Six days later, on November 10, Snake arrived on the coast of Costa Rica at Playa del Alba, after the MSF settle aboard the offshore plant provided by Galvez, dubbed Mother Base. With radio support from Miller, Snake infiltrated the jungle where he evaded the patrolling CIA mercenaries. At the supply depot, he interrogated a radioman who had been directing cargo to Mt. Irazu, before knocking him unconscious with his stun rod. Snake then witnessed a strange VTOL aircraft passing overhead, before finding a map concerning the security company's bases in the region. Noticing the unusual amount of radiation film badges at the depot, and recalling the radioman's earlier conversation regarding 'spears', Snake and Miller become alarmed that nuclear weapons were apparently being shipped into the country. This act would constitute a violation of the Tlatelolco Treaty, ratified by Costa Rica in 1969, which forbid it from the use, storage, or transport of nuclear weapons.



Fearless

Requiring more intel on the lay of the land, and to verify the presence of nukes in the region, Miller suggested that Snake ally himself with the local Sandinista guerillas, who had fled the Somoza regime in neighboring Nicaragua. Meanwhile, Miller assured Snake of the ongoing repairs to the previously abandoned Mother Base, and Paz offered to provide additional radio support from her school at Ciudad Colón. Miller then informed Snake that the Sadinistas' hideout in El Cenegal was under attack and that he should hurry. Snake traversed the El Cenagal jungle to the northwest, bypassing a ravine and passing through the swamp near the Rio del Jade. He arrived at the FSLN's boathouse hideout and neutralized the occupying security detail, before making contact with the hidden Sandinistas and their comandante, Amanda Valenciano Libre. Confirming that the security firm were indeed CIA, Amanda suspected that they were going to stage a coup similar to the one in Chile. Amanda claimed that their advanced hardware and multiple bases could not simply be to eradicate their group (the amount was comparable to Da Nang), and that something of more importance must be occurring. She told Snake of a mercenary base to the north, located in an abandoned factory, which had once served as a front for a drug production plant, provided by the KGB to help finance their revolution. A transport boat with mercenaries on board had also been heading upstream towards Irazu.

Little Brother

Amanda's Sandinistas were suddenly attacked by the aircraft Snake had witnessed earlier, revealed to be an unmanned weapon, accompanied by several 'kidnapper' drones. Though a few drones were destroyed by Snake's LAW, one was able to capture Amanda's younger brother, Chico, with its grappling hook and escape. The Sandinistas then gave chase as the unmanned aircraft and drones departed, with Snake choosing to follow after enemy reinforcements were deployed to the area. Proceeding to the banana factory that Amanda had mentioned earlier, Snake was forced to neutralize an enemy LAV-Type G and the heavily armored soldiers accompanying it. After departing the banana plantation, Snake found Amanda in the jungle, where a kidnapper attempted to abduct her. Snake helped her to get free, though she was injured from the fall, breaking one of her legs in the process of landing.



Afterwards, Amanda told Snake of a prison in the mountains, which was where Chico was most likely to be located. Snake then requested that she join the MSF aboard Mother Base until she could heal up. Realizing that they needed a guide to help track down the nuclear weapon shipment, Snake infiltrated the prison facility in Camino de Lava in order to rescue Chico, who was intimately familiar with the route into the mountains. Successfully locating Chico, the twelve year old boy informed Snake of the shipping route used by the CIA mercenaries: cargo from the harbor was first transported by barge through the marshes; it was then taken by train through a coffee plantation; then finally loaded onto trucks to ship to the other side of Mt. Irazu, via an underground tunnel. Chico had never ventured any further, since the area was supposedly guarded by a spirit, which he referred to as 'el basilisco.' Upset that he had betrayed his compas while being interrogated, Chico asked Snake to kill him. Snake refused, demanding instead that Chico prove his strength by fighting with him and becoming a new man. Chico then joined his sister aboard Mother Base to support the MSF in their mission.

Tank Corps

Snake then headed to the jungle train depot, east of the coffee plantation, to stop the delivery of nukes. Rescuing several FSLN prisoners along the way, Snake reached the depot, though he was too late to prevent the nukes being transported via truck through the underground tunnel. He was then forced to neutralize an enemy T-72 Ural tank that had spotted him, along with its escort unit, after the tank demolished the tunnel entrance. Forced to proceed via an alternate route via Los Cantos, Snake eventually arrived at Fuerte la Ladera. Evading the enemy soldiers stationed at the old fortress, Snake reached the entrance to their base, hidden within a crater. Infiltrating a garage, Snake identified the truck he had seen earlier from its license plate, though the nukes had already been offloaded.

Attempting to locate the nukes within the facility, Snake overheard an argument between wheelchair-bound engineer Huey Emmerich and the CIA Station Chief of Central America, Hot Coldman. Coldman intended to purposefully launch a nuclear warhead using Huey's creation, in order to prove its effectiveness in regards to nuclear deterrence, and return to his former position as CIA Director. Huey, however, was unconvinced and refused to cooperate with his employer any further. The argument then turned violent, with Coldman shoving Emmerich down a stairway before departing.

Pupa

Helped back into his wheelchair by Snake, Huey frantically told him of the impending nuclear launch. Rushing to the large open-top hangar, Snake witnessed the removal of a tarp-covered device by the unmanned VTOL aircraft, accompanied by a Hind D gunship. A tank, notably similar in appearance to the Soviet Shagohod, suddenly entered the area, and attacked Snake. Equipped with an AI pod on its frame, Huey warned Snake that the vehicle was also an unmanned weapon, codenamed Pupa. With Huey's advice, Snake was able to defeat the Pupa and put it out of commission.

Huey later informed Snake that the Pupa was a prototype AI weapon, similar to the VTOL aircraft Chrysalis, and a treaded type known as Cocoon. Led by disgraced former DCI Hot Coldman, the security company operating within Costa Rica, known as the Peace Sentinel, had used the Irazu facility to develop the AI weapons' frames. The nukes that Snake had been pursuing were now loaded onto the machine that was airlifted from the facility. Codenamed Peace Walker, the bipedal machine was a mobile unmanned nuclear platform, and the end result of the Peace Sentinel's AI research.

Cold Principle

The aim of the Peace Walker project was to develop an automated, fail-deadly, nuclear launch system, stealth-shielded from radar and satellites to evade any pre-emptive strike. Its purpose was to launch a retaliatory strike at an appropriate target, without human input, in the event of a nuclear attack, overcoming the inherent uncertainty in human decision making. Huey had proposed that the weapon have a bipedal design in order to traverse the difficult terrain of Central America, where



several units were to be deployed. Snake then realized that Peace Walker was the 'el basilisco' that Chico had witnessed, and that Peace Walker was in essence a similar concept like Metal Gear that was described to him by Aleksandr Leonovitch Granin ten years ago.

Though initially believing in the maintenance of peace through nuclear deterrence, Huey had been unwilling to allow Coldman to demonstrate the weapon's power by carrying out an actual nuclear attack. Demanding to know

where the nukes were headed, Snake was told they had been taken to the border, and that the final test would take place in five days. Huey suggested that Snake locate another of Peace Walker's AI researchers, Dr. Strangelove, who had created the weapon's high-level decision-making AI, the Mammal Pod. Huey then considered abandoning his research, though Snake convinced him to join 'Outer Heaven' instead, as part of the MSF's R&D team aboard Mother Base. Agreeing to this, Huey speculated that with enough resources, the MSF could build their own bipedal mech, to help thwart the Peace Walker project.



On November 19, Snake set out for the AI facility, avoiding the heightened security in Selva de la Leche, before arriving at Catarata de la Muerte. A Hind A, accompanied by several troops were waiting for Snake in the area, forcing him to neutralize them all. Emerging victorious, Snake continued on to Selva de la Muerte, bypassing more security, until he eventually reached the Ruinas de Xochiquetzal.

While travelling through the ruins, Snake found a distressed woman resting by a tree, who became startled by his sudden appearance. Snake reassured the Frenchwoman, an ornithologist named Cécile Cosima Caminades, that he would not harm her, and offered her a mate. Having visited Costa Rica a week earlier to observe the native quetzal, Cécile had accidentally recorded the voices of two women conducting a test exercise, with her portable cassette player. She had subsequently been captured by armed soldiers, then blindfolded and imprisoned, though she was well cared for by one of the women she had previously overheard. Stealing an ID card, she had recently escaped into the jungle, before succumbing to exhaustion, barefoot and with no supplies. Realizing that she must be Paz's lost friend, whose tape was in the MSF's possession, Snake had her transported back to Mother Base via Fulton recovery, where she could either stay and help, or return home.

Entry Gate

Proceeding to the AI facility, which was hidden within an ancient Mayan temple, Snake discovered that the ID card provided by Huey would not grant him access. He then contacted Cécile back at Mother Base, who told him of an orange-jacketed guard that had confiscated her own stolen ID card during her escape attempt. Stationed in an area in which she heard quetzals singing, Cécile helped Snake to identify the guard and secure the card.

Later, Miller informed Snake that the tape back at Mother Base had indeed belonged to Cécile, but discovered that she had never even met Paz before. Choosing to settle the matter later, Snake gained access to the grounds of the research facility, where he encountered a white Andalusian horse; the same breed as that which had belonged to The Boss. Confronted by a woman in a red coat and sunglasses, Snake correctly identified her as Dr. Strangelove, who accused him of coming to destroy her research. Strangelove held a great deal of resentment



towards Snake, due to his assassination of The Boss ten years earlier. She had been waiting to meet her killer, who had chosen loyalty to a shadowy country over the mentor that had made him who he was. Feeling abandoned after The Boss's death, Strangelove was desperate to learn the



answers from the woman she had once loved, and she had attempted to bring her back to life in the form of the AI she was currently developing. Though he remained suspicious of her intentions, Snake was intrigued by her knowledge of The Boss, and followed her into the lab. There, he was presented with the cylindrical shell-encased AI, the Mammal Pod.

In return for her participation in the Peace Walker project, Strangelove had demanded that the CIA grant her access to all information regarding The Boss: her personal history; military records; physiological data; correspondence; files on every single operation she had participated in, every decision she had made, and every emotion she had felt during her lifetime. Believing The Boss to be the finest rational mind with which



to model the MAD-based AI, Strangelove knew that it would be capable of selecting the most suitable targets for nuclear retaliation, however painful the decision might be. However, her true goal was to clear The Boss's name, by learning why the legendary hero was forced to betray her country, and why she had been killed by her most beloved disciple. Snake denied wanting to know The Boss's last will, calling her a traitor, to which Strangelove challenged him to destroy the AI, and extinguish her noble soul once more. Beckoned by the voice of The Boss, Snake entered the AI pod, though he was unable to destroy it due to the AI's haunting words, forcing him to recall his past in Tselinoyarsk, before passing out.

Chrysalis

Awakening on the AI facility's grounds, Snake saw a Hind carrying away the AI pod. The Chrysalis AI weapon then emerged from behind the temple, and Snake was forced to destroy the aircraft. Shortly thereafter, Miller contacted him to confirm the location of Peace Walker's final testing area, identified with Huey's help: an underground base disguised as a rock quarry 15 miles to the north of the lab. Accused of being unable to come to terms with his past, regarding The Boss, Snake swore to Miller that he would destroy the AI upon their next encounter, due to Peace Walker's imminent completion. He also began to doubt The Boss's real intentions during Operation Snake Eater, due to Strangelove having disbelieved his account of the mission's debriefing.



Cocoon

Using the Boss's old horse, Snake traveled to the quarry on November 21. Abandoning the horse, Snake reached a mining pit where he observed Peace Walker itself descending, via cargo elevator, into the underground base for final testing. As he made his approach, Snake was spotted by a kidnapper drone, triggering an alert that sent Peace Sentinel troops out to kill him. After the entire unit was neutralized, the Cocoon AI weapon then entered the pit to finish Snake off, forcing Snake to destroy the gargantuan attack craft. Shrapnel from Cocoon's destruction damages a nearby electronic door, allowing Snake access to the base.



Facility

Reaching Peace Walker's hangar, he saw Strangelove's team taking a break from preparing the unit, and slipped through to the Mammal Pod. Snake then interrogated the Boss AI about Operation Snake Eater, but unable to gain any answers from it, he prepared to destroy it. The AI pod suddenly opens up, with Strangelove, Coldman, and several troops surrounding him. Coldman explained that the deployment of Peace Walker was part of a plan to re-establish U.S. superiority that had faded in the aftermath of the Cuban Missile Crisis and the various arms control treaties established ever since. Coldman also admitted to being the mastermind of Operation Snake Eater, and implied that he had been relocated to Central America as a result. Seeing an opportunity to attack, Snake engaged several of the guards in CQC, grabbing Strangelove's ID card in the confusion, before being subdued.

Snow later awakened in a prison cell, where he was tortured by Strangelove on whether The Boss had truly died for her country or if she was indeed a traitor. Snake's refusal to talk, however, gave her the clues she needed to complete the Mammal Pod's programming. After falling unconscious, Snake came to in a cell, and used Strangelove's ID card to free himself. Recovering his gear, Miller informed Snake that he had been unable to contact Paz, and that she and Galvez were not at her school either. Suspecting that

Coldman may be behind her disappearance, Snake returned to Peace Walker's hangar, where his suspicions were proven correct upon encountering said Station Chief and a captured Paz.



Coldman proudly told Snake of the Mammal Pod's completion, thanks to his interrogation at the hands of Strangelove. He then revealed that Peace Walker's first target would be MSF's Mother Base in the offshore area of the Caribbean. The trade winds would then scatter the nuclear fallout all throughout the region, causing fish and crops to die out, leaving many free hands to contribute to Peace Walker's mass production. Before the test, Coldman intended to first demonstrate to the White House Peace Walker's all-terrain capabilities, by having it travel the Caribbean Coast on its own, traversing both communist and guerilla territory. Coldman then departed with Paz, with Snake becoming distracted by Peace Walker's sudden activation, which began to ascend aboard the cargo elevator to the mining pit above.

Take Down

Climbing out of an emergency escape hatch above ground, Snake immediately fired upon Peace Walker, whereupon the Mammal Pod entered self-defense mode and retaliated. The bipedal Peace Walker then opened up with its smaller weapons launchers and flamethrower. After a grueling fight, Snake dealt sufficient damage to the machine to cause its momentary collapse to the ground, and its AI to begin behaving erratically. Coldman's Hind D then fired a few rounds at the Mammal Pod, causing Peace Walker to enter a quadrupedal formation and begin following the gunship across the mountainous forests. With The Boss's horse returning to his aid, Snake gave chase to Peace Walker, evading its missile attacks as trees collapsed all around them. However, as Peace Walker approached the Nicaraguan border, Snake's horse lost its footing on the steep slopes. Though Snake was relatively unscathed, the horse was gravely wounded and he was forced to shoot the animal dead. Scaling the hillside himself, Snake watched helplessly as Peace Walker crossed the Rio San Juan.

By kidnapping the MSF's client, Coldman hoped to prevent the group's interference with Peace Walker. Speculating that he was aware of her connection to the KGB, via Galvez, Snake and Miller assumed he would also interrogate her on the Soviets' plans to disrupt the weapon. Meanwhile, Amanda had her Nicaraguan compass of the

Guerra Popular Prolongada track Peace Walker towards a U.S. military supply base on the southeastern shore of Lago Cocibolca. To cross the border, Amanda told Snake of a route that the FSLN use to cross by boat, and arranged an introduction with the captain.



With information provided by Huey, the MSF realized that Peace Walker would launch its nuke from the U.S. base following two days preparation, which would coincide with the upcoming U.S.-Soviet SALT-II (Strategic Arms Limitation Treaty) talks in Vladivostok. Wondering whether Coldman planned to disrupt the negotiations, or use it as a bargaining chip, the MSF made preparations to infiltrate the base and prevent the launch.

Dead Ahead

On November 23, Snake traveled to Nicaragua by gondola, heading west of the river until he reached the northern bank and was assisted by a guide to get close to the U.S. missile base. Snake then disguised himself as a crate and managed to hitch a ride in the back of a cargo truck through the back gate. Miller informed Snake of an airfield on the other end of the base, which was where Peace Walker would launch, along with a communication tower ahead of him where it would be controlled from. Snake briefly considered calling an evacuation of Mother Base, which Amanda and her FSLN unit had already done, though the rest of MSF decided to stay behind, confident that Snake would prevent the launch. However, Miller decided to prepare a backup unit to aid him, just in case.

Commencing his infiltration, Snake discovered kidnapper drones and Soviet soldiers patrolling the American base, and was mystified by their presence. Entering a security recording room, Snake found Paz on one of the video monitors, who informed him that Coldman was headed for the comm tower in order to input the final data for Peace Walker's launch. Sirens suddenly sounded throughout the base, and Snake was forced to fight his way to the comm tower, with Miller and the MSF heading to Nicaragua to aid him, via a squadron of helicopters and gunboats. Reaching the tower, Snake neutralized a Hind D and an entire enemy unit that was protecting the entrance, before proceeding inside.



Boot Sequence

Inside the comm tower, Snake encountered Coldman and Paz, but was quickly surrounded by dozens of Soviet soldiers. Coldman proclaimed that Snake was too late, having already input false data regarding a Soviet nuclear attack on the United States mainland. Since Peace Walker was solely a deterrent, it was incapable of commencing a pre-emptive nuclear strike, so it was necessary to trick Peace Walker's AI into retaliating to a perceived threat, which would select an optimal target from a pre-defined list. The false data had also been reverse-engineered to have Peace Walker inevitably choose Mother Base as its target. Coldman believed that Peace Walker would be the first and last nuclear retaliation of the Cold War, and that it would be the only way to ever come close to true peace. As he prepared to input the confirmation code via a briefcase handcuffed to his arm, Snake pointed his rifle towards him, ignoring the surrounding soldiers, until they were interrupted by the appearance of Professor Galvez.

Snake and Paz both realized that Galvez, real name Vladimir Alexandrovich Zadornov, had been in league with Coldman all along. However, Zadornov then announced the successful occupation of the base by his troops and the soldiers present subsequently pointed their weapons towards Coldman. Having previously supplied technology to the Peace Sentinels, in exchange for land and soldiers,

Zadornov had planned to take Peace Walker for himself and launch a nuclear strike at Cuba instead. A nuclear weapon launched from a United States missile base, located in a country with a pro-American regime, towards one of the Soviet Union's greatest allies, would cause anti-American sentiment to spread throughout Central America, splitting North and South America apart, and bringing the Soviets one step closer to winning the Cold War. Coldman was outraged at Zadornov's betrayal.

Zadornov then placed his gun into Paz's hands and ordered her to shoot Coldman, reminding her of the torture she had suffered at the supply facility. Coldman apologized to her and Paz could not bring herself to fire at him. Grabbing Paz's hands, Zadornov pulled the trigger of the gun and shot Coldman twice in the chest, though he deliberately avoided a killing blow. Zadornov then forced him to place his red diskette into the nuclear launch briefcase and ordered Strangelove to change Peace Walker's target to Cuba, threatening to crush her 'beloved' should she resist. Finally turning to Snake, Zadornov remarked that he was a true comandante, having taken a ragtag group of rebels and children and turned them into a formidable army, providing additional momentum to the revolution in Nicaragua. His death at the 'CIA's hands,' similar to Che Guevara before him, would strengthen the Sandinistas' resolve in overthrowing the pro-American regime, with the nuclear launch at Cuba being the last straw. After an announcement that the Mammal

Pod's data entry had been completed, Zadornov told Snake that he would die just like The Boss died: as an eternal fraud.

However, before he could execute Snake, both the MSF the FSLN stormed into the control room and took out the Soviet soldiers. Amanda then forced Zadornov onto his knees, proclaiming that the Sandinistas would no longer be puppets for the KGB, and that they would win their own victory. Having accomplished their goal in returning to Nicaragua with Snake's help, the Sandinistas began to chant 'Vic Boss!' in celebration.

Soon afterwards, the MSF began their return to Mother Base, with Zadornov and an injured Coldman in their custody. Telling Miller that he would catch up later, after he disposed of The Boss AI, Snake was confronted by Strangelove. She informed him that she had only wished to learn the truth about The Boss by bringing her back as an AI, and that he should speak with it to learn of it himself. She also offered her apologies for having tortured Snake earlier, and thanked him for eliminating the Peace Sentinels.

Uninterrupted Signal

Meanwhile, Paz cried aboard an MSF chopper due to her ordeal at the base, with Miller remarking that aiming a weapon alone does not make it a deterrent. He also reminded Paz of her role as an 'angel of peace' and that she should leave the guns to MSF, their mission in Costa Rica now complete. However, Coldman, despite dying from blood loss, was able to input a code into the nuclear briefcase before Miller could stop him, laughing as he did so. As a result, Peace Walker became active, preparing for the nuclear launch at Cuba, with Coldman telling the group that the input false data would also be relayed to NORAD. Miller quickly informed Snake of this development, since the MSF were unable to block the MLF signal. Since the false data was designed to be indistinguishable from that of a real Soviet attack, Washington would be forced to consider nuclear retaliation, though Coldman was confident they would be unable to do so, due to human nature. Peace Walker's AI, however, would have no qualms regarding a retaliatory strike, thus proving its effectiveness as the 'perfect deterrent.'

With the U.S. President and Vice President in absence, due to the SALT-II talks, the Legislative Branch would be granted nuclear launch authority, more specifically the Speaker. Believing the false data to be reliable, NORAD initiated DEFCON 3 and contacted SAC to prepare for an emergency meeting. Huey, hacking into Peace

Walker's data transmission, relayed these developments to the MSF, though Coldman remained convinced that Washington would order no retaliation. Miller demanded that he stop Peace Walker, since only he knew of the abort code, but Coldman refused. Attempting to make the V-for-Victory sign, Coldman exclaimed the word 'Peace' before finally passing away.

Snake immediately set out to destroy Peace Walker, to both prevent the nuclear launch and stop the false data transmission. After a lengthy battle, Peace Walker's drive system was damaged, and the launch was prevented, though the data uplinks still remained intact. Huey then informed Snake that BMEWS were continuing to track the false targets on radar and that the DSP satellite status was green. Meanwhile, the Chairman of the Joint Chiefs of Staff, a representative of the Secretary of Defense, and various members of Congress arrived at the NMCC. A NORAD Operator confirmed from the data that there were 1,500 ICBMs crossing the North Pole and were targeting the West



Coast, commanding that they go to DEFCON 2 and prepare launching ICBMs towards the Soviet Union.

As a fully autonomous system, Peace Walker's command authorities were located inside the Mammal Pod, unlike the other AI weapons Snake had fought. Mammal Pod's outer casing was also designed to be as strong as a nuclear bomb shelter, making his weapons ineffective. Huey then pointed out that sinking Peace Walker into the nearby lake may disrupt the sensitive electronics of the AI, since the pressure at its depths may cause water to penetrate the damaged frame. However, Miller realized it would be impossible to lift the 500 ton behemoth. Back at the ECR HQ, the members were unable to contact the President and after much frantic argument, they agreed on nuclear retaliation. Realizing that Coldman had been wrong, Snake demanded that Huey patch him through to the Pentagon.

Making contact with the Chairman, Snake ordered him to abort the retaliatory strike, telling him of the false data leak executed by the now-dead CIA Station Chief of Central America. As proof of his identity as Big Boss, Snake described to him the events of his secret debriefing by former President Johnson, following Operation Snake Eater, to which the Chairman had been in attendance as the Army Chief of Staff. Convinced of Snake's truthfulness, the Chairman told everyone that

the Soviet missiles were fakes and that it was indeed Big Boss who had contacted them. However, some members remained skeptical, with one officer pulling a gun on the Chairman after he attempted to call off the retaliatory strike.



Peace Walker

Just as all hope seemed lost, the Mammal Pod opened of its own accord, allowing Snake access to The Boss AI in order to remove all of its memory boards. However, the data uplink remained in effect. Meanwhile, the ECR Officer holding the Chairman at gunpoint declared his authority to call the nuclear strike and he did so, remarking that deterrence was nothing more than a fool's dream. At the missile base, Strangelove told Snake that Peace Walker's second AI, the Reptile Pod, must have overtaken the functions of the Mammal Pod. Snake, in desperation, tried to damage Peace Walker as much as possible, and the machine seemingly malfunctioned, then began to stand upright. The AI then began to playback The Carpenters' 'Sing,' which had been a hit in 1973, using the voice of The Boss herself via its speech synthesis system. Peace Walker then began to enter the lake, causing Strangelove to remark that she was trying to drown herself to stop the data transmission.

The missiles on NORAD HQ's radar then disappeared, and were replaced by Peace symbols. Huey deduced that, in a similar function to the human brain, Peace Walker must have used functional compensation to take over its tasks, as a result of the Mammal and Reptile Pods essentially acting as one. Strangelove wondered if her memories remained in her through the song. Huey then mentioned that it was not thinking clearly, and was instead using its

heart. Miller then stated that The Boss's innocence had been proven, and requested for Snake to listen to her song. Strangelove then realized and understood why The Boss had done what she did ten years ago: when she went into space as part of the Mercury Project, she saw a beauty other than war. She put down her gun and instead chose to sing. They would all hear her singing, and she sacrificed everything to have her will live on. She couldn't achieve it, but she still sang, hoping for the illusion called peace that could not be found. Snake, after mirroring his salute ten years ago at The Boss's grave, then removed his bandana, where it was lost to the wind.



Afterwards Snake held a brief conversation with Kaz in which he declared that he had again found himself and wished to live his life differently from that of The Boss. He felt that she had betrayed him and everything she did as a soldier by lowering her gun and surrendering her life merely for her country. Snake finally requested that he be known as 'Big Boss' from then on.

Zero Allies

After the events in Costa Rica and Nicaragua, Paz was evicted from her school dorm, since her scholarship had come from Zadornov, so Snake allowed her to stay at Mother Base to help out. Since Coldman's death left Strangelove without a job, Snake also accepted her and she began working on the Militaires Sans Frontières's own AI weapon, called Metal Gear ZEKE, alongside Huey. The mech was later armed with Peace Walker's nuclear warhead, which was recovered from the bottom of Lago Cocibolca, in order to provide a nuclear deterrent for the expanded Mother Base. Zadornov also escaped his cell several times, forcing the MSF to find and recapture him. On the last time, Snake found him at the shooting range and killed him in self-defense after Zadornov tried to gun him down. Dying, Zadornov then launched his prosthetic hand at Snake, revealed to be a rocket-powered projectile, after mentioning that his work was done, though he again missed his target. Snake was suspicious because Zadornov's numerous escapes pointed to an inside job. Kaz alerted him about ZEKE suddenly moving out of its hangar and rising to the surface of Mother Base.

SNAKE arrived on Mother Base's deck to discover that Paz was manually operating the ZEKE unit. Miller was unable to shut it down remotely, with Paz revealing that she had made modifications to ZEKE while Zadornov had diverted their attention with his multiple escape attempts.

She then announced that she was taking it back to 'their' leaders, Cipher, and that her real name was Pacifica Ocean. Her portrayal as an ambassador of peace had simply been an elaborate ruse, and that the real Peace Walker Project would soon be fulfilled. Pacifica accused Snake of having taken the wrong path, regarding his parting ways with his former FOX commander and friend Zero two years earlier.



The two men had been unable to come to terms with their sorrow over The Boss's death, so they had each decided to carry on the will of their hero. However, they could not agree what that will was, so they had split up and become bitter enemies. Pacifica then demanded that Snake follow the will of Cipher.

With the Cold War nearing an end, the age of electronic intelligence would come to the fore, and Cipher planned to unite the various agencies of the intelligence community under a single will. Cipher would then gather information with the intent of guiding the world and its people's minds, while the populace remained blissfully unaware. Ultimate control would provide the illusion of peace, and a 'world

without borders' would arise, accomplishing what The Boss had apparently long sought for. By obeying Cipher, the Militaires Sans Frontières would act as a deterrent against forces that would threaten the development of this new world order, distracting the old order's eyes with Snake's charisma and military prowess.



Reassuring Snake that he would be allowed to retain control of MSF and ZEKE, Pacifica beckoned for him to accept Cipher's offer. Snake denied her accusation that he was afraid to abandon his life's calling, as The Boss had supposedly done, and refused the proposal. Rescinding the offer, Pacifica then sought to launch a nuclear strike at the U.S. East Coast, then frame the MSF as an extremist cult. Snake took on and destroyed ZEKE, but before it was destroyed, Paz warned of Snake becoming an international criminal in the decades ahead. ZEKE then exploded and Paz was thrown by the force of the explosion into the ocean. Big Boss can only express remorse at having to fight Paz. The remains of ZEKE were later salvaged, with Strangelove remarking that the AI has a backup copy. Strangelove and Huey also began to have a better understanding of each other.



A few hours after the destruction of ZEKE, Kaz admitted learning of Paz's real identity and purpose well beforehand and that 'Cipher' was Major Zero, who perpetrated the whole plot and indirectly triggered MSF's expansion. Although Snake was angry at him, Kaz explained that the MSF set a new trend in military operations with their actions in Costa Rica, and predicted that the end of the Cold War would give rise to regional conflicts where the MSF could thrive. Since the MSF's battle capabilities disrupted the global military balance of power, Snake warned that certain forces would definitely try to take them down, hence their need to continue operating outside of society.

In a later address over a loudspeaker, Snake told his troops that their group would serve under anyone regardless of nations and ideologies, and they would soon build a nation they could call their own, called Outer Heaven.

Aftermath

Having failed at getting Snake to rejoin Cipher as well as not gaining total control of ZEKE and MSF, the organization devised a new plan to destroy MSF and Snake out of revenge. Big Boss also inferred that thanks to Paz's rebellion, most of the world would be hunting them down.

Snow and Kaz meanwhile would later discover that Paz survived the battle and was captured by XOF on Cipher's orders. She was held at Camp Omega in Cuba due to suspicions that she had been compromised. Big Boss planned and executed a rescue mission to preserve their only link to Cipher and to ensure she would not compromise MSF under duress.



Metal Gear Solid 5: Ground Zeroes

Developer	Kojima Productions
Publisher	Konami
Director	Hideo Kojima
Producer	Hideo Kojima Kenichiro Imaizumi Kazuki Muraoka
Designer	Hideo Kojima
Artist	Yoji Shinkawa Ikuya Nakamura
Writer	Hideo Kojima Shuyo Murata Hidenari Inamura
Composer	Harry Gregson-Williams Akihiro Honda Ludvig Forssell
Platform	Multi Platform
Release date	March 18, 2014



Some time after the Peace Walker Incident, Paz had survived the fall from top of Mother Base after losing a fierce battle to Big Boss. Eventually, she was rescued by a Belizean fisherman who found her drifting in the Caribbean. After being informed by Miller of her survival, Big Boss suggested her assassination due to her being a Cipher agent who had important information about the Militaires Sans Frontières. Disagreeing with him, Kaz mentioned another plan. He stated that MSF’s ‘friends’ at Cipher suspect Paz could be a double agent. Kaz also informed Big Boss that Paz is being held for interrogation at Camp Omega, a maximum security prison facility on the southern tip of Cuba (on communist soil and outside of U.S. legal jurisdiction). Meanwhile, there was an upcoming UN nuclear inspection of Mother Base, the ‘perfect’ timing of which made Miller doubt Paz leaked information about the nature of MSF. At last, Big Boss and Miller both agreed that the wisest action is to save Paz who was their only link to Cipher, along with Chico, who was held as prisoner somewhere close to Paz’s location after taking upon a rescue mission himself (due to him having feelings for Paz).

At midnight on March 16, 1975, Big Boss began his mission alone, due to the political sensitivities, and infiltrated Camp Omega from its southern cliff.

1975 XOF Trojan Horse Operation

A Trojan Horse operation was carried out by the paramilitary force XOF to destroy Militaires Sans Frontières and its leader Big Boss, due to the mercenary group's growing strength.



Inspection preparations

Around late February 1975, MSF received a letter from the IAEA requesting that they inspect Mother Base, allegedly due to their ordering nuclear fuel from Uzbekistan officials. Big Boss and Kazuhira Miller both realized that the IAEA had been manipulated by Cipher and the real reason was to locate Metal Gear ZEKE's nuclear warhead as revenge for foiling their plan via Paz Ortega Andrade earlier. Although they attempted to refuse the inspection, Dr. Huey Emmerich had secretly sent a letter indicating that they changed their minds. Forced into a situation where they either allow the inspection to occur or draw unwanted suspicion if they had a third 'change of heart,' Big Boss and Miller rushed to prepare for the inspections. This included sending all civilians save for Huey (which included the French ornithologist Cécile Cosima Caminades) back to their home countries, as well as sending all their armored vehicles except for ZEKE to the shore alongside any rebellious personnel for mandatory R&R. Any remaining Sandinista soldiers at Mother Base were sent to regroup with Amanda Valenciano Libre at Cuba (also extending her assignment thanks to the upcoming inspection), and the remaining personnel were told the truth to ensure no one accidentally exposed the existence of either ZEKE or its nuke. The one silver lining in all of this was they didn't need to worry about Dr. Strangelove divulging the existence of ZEKE or the nuke, as she had already resigned from MSF and left Mother Base the week before.

Word of Paz's survival

On March 6, 1975, Miller revealed that, thanks to both intercepted reports from Cipher as well as Amanda, they discovered that Paz was still alive. Miller suggested that they retrieve her, in order to get information on Cipher's true nature, as she was their sole viable link. However, because of the inspection, MSF was forced to put it off until afterwards, and hoped to send Chico to meet with his sister to distract him, as word was already spreading about her survival. Unfortunately, Chico never made it to Havana; he had snuck off the ship he was to be delivered on while it was refueling at Santiago de Cuba and travelled via a three-day hike on the 60 mile mountainous expanse between Santiago and the prison facility Paz was held at. He then attempted a rescue of Paz, narrowly evading several choppers, but ended up caught when he found a prisoner who resembled Paz, resulting in his capture. Miller later discovered this from both Amanda and Big Boss, and ordered for the Intel Team stationed at Cuba to find Chico.



Chico's imprisonment

Chico was imprisoned at Camp Omega, which contained animal cages, and also had bolts installed into his achilles tendon. A few days later, during a routine torture session of Paz, Chico was taken with the group, XOF, to the Admin building, where he met the group's leader, Skull Face. Skull Face informed Chico that there



was no hope for escape, unless he was to submit to interrogation regarding Mother Base's defenses. After several interrogations, including beatings, watching Paz get stripped, raped, and beaten, and then forcing Chico to have sex with Paz while Skull Face watched, Chico, broken from the torture, relayed everything he knew about Mother Base, including confirmation about ZEKE's existence. He then was locked back up, and then forced to torture Paz.

Skull Face, knowing Big Boss and MSF are most likely going to try to find Chico and possibly Paz, then had Chico send a SOS signal explaining where he and Paz were.

True to Skull Face's predictions, Big Boss and Miller realized it was most likely a trap, but were left with no other options but to rescue Chico and Paz.



After preparations, including doing a flight path and prepping a bird as well as final briefings on the location site, Big Boss then departed for the coastline of Cuba, with the only backup being a sole extraction chopper to arrived once he rescued Chico and Paz, alongside presumably any other prisoners he managed to find. Skull Face, however, still had unfinished business with Paz. He revealed that Paz was the only Cipher agent who actually met Zero face-to-face, and as such she knew his location, and he wanted her to divulge his location to him, as he intended to liberate himself from Cipher. After getting his location after implying that this might help Big Boss, Skull Face also put a bomb in Paz's stomach and another bomb inside an undisclosed part of her body, anticipating the likelihood that Big Boss would attempt to rescue her.

Rescuing Chico

Two days later, on March 16 at 00:00, Skull Face paid a final visit to Chico's cell, and gave him back his Walkman. After telling Chico that '[Paz] didn't suffer long,' he told Chico to give his regards to Big Boss when he arrives. Skull Face then departed for the heliport alongside XOF. After masking the chopper's XOF logo with a strange light, he then commented that the 'trojan horse' was a go and had the group depart. He then ordered for all of the XOF personnel to dispose of all their XOF patches. However, nine of those patches survived, one of which landed on Big Boss's posterior while he was scaling the cliff. Big Boss then travelled to Camp Omega after noticing its location on the iDroid, evading patrols and watchmen. After knocking out the guards near the area, he then found Chico in his cage, although Chico ended up panicking at the sight of him, forcing Big Boss to put him in a sleeper hold due to it otherwise drawing the guards to him. He then took him to the extraction site.



Retrieving Paz

After setting him down at the extraction site, Chico informed Big Boss that Paz was dead after showing him his walkman tape of her interrogation, reaffirming it when he was asked for her location. Undeterred, Big Boss managed to deduce Paz's location from the tape sounds, tracing her to the basement of the Admin building of the base. He then found her strung up to the boiler room. After making sure she was alive, he then cut her loose and took her with him. All the while, she was talking in her sleep about disturbing events. He then returned to the extraction site with the base now searching for the missing Paz, and managed to load Chico and Paz onto the chopper and left.



Attack on Mother Base

On their way back to the base, Chico discovered Paz had a scar on her gut and warned Big Boss. Upon seeing the scar, Big Boss ordered for a medic to come to her. Realizing from the scar that she was most likely rigged with a bomb by her captors, they were forced to operate on Paz immediately, not having any time for anesthetics due to the unexpected discovery. During the surgery, Huey informed Big Boss that the inspection was a success and that they have not found ZEKE. Eventually, they found the bomb which allowed them to remove and dispose of it.



However, the chopper lost contact with Mother Base, with Big Boss soon discovering why: it was under attack by the XOF forces. He then returned to one of the struts and aided Miller and the others in escaping, also shooting down an XOF chopper. However, the strut was about to collapse due to C4 being placed on the struts. They then rushed to evacuate with only Big Boss, Miller and a single MSF soldier able to escape, the rest having been gunned down by the surviving XOF soldiers. Retreating from the

crumbling Mother Base, Miller interrogated Paz out of anger at the losses MSF had suffered when Paz revealed that she had been implanted with a second bomb, and jumped out of the chopper to save them. Unfortunately, she jumped out too late as the explosion caused it to careen into a pursuing XOF chopper.

Aftermath

The attack on Mother Base was so damaging that smoke could be seen from far away. The media reported them as being 'money-hungry private militias' and a scandal ensued when the United States and its allies were discovered to have been clients of MSF, although the Secretary of Defense denied their involvement in the incident, and the other nations among the client's list refused to comment either way. Similarly, the UN and the IAEA were mentioned to have done an inspection on that day, yet they too denied any involvement. There were no reported survivors, although choppers were seen in the area both prior to and after the incident.

Big Boss, Miller and an unknown third individual were evacuated to a hospital to have their injuries treated, where the former fell into a nine year coma. Huey and Morpho also survived the events of the operation.



Metal Gear Solid 5: The Phantom Pain

Developer	Kojima Productions
Publisher	Konami
Director	Hideo Kojima
Producer	Hideo Kojima Kenichiro Imaizumi
Designer	Hideo Kojima
Artist	Yoji Shinkawa
Writer	Hideo Kojima Shuyo Murata Hidenari Inamura
Composer	Ludvig Forssell Akihiro Honda Harry Gregson-Williams
Platform	Multi Platform
Release date	September 1, 2015



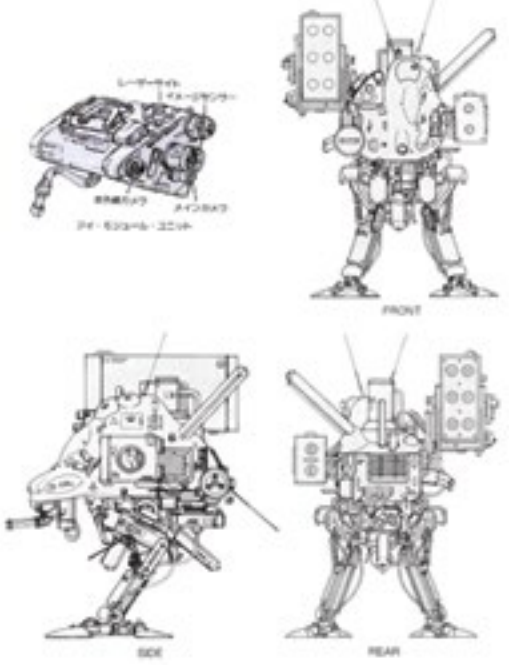
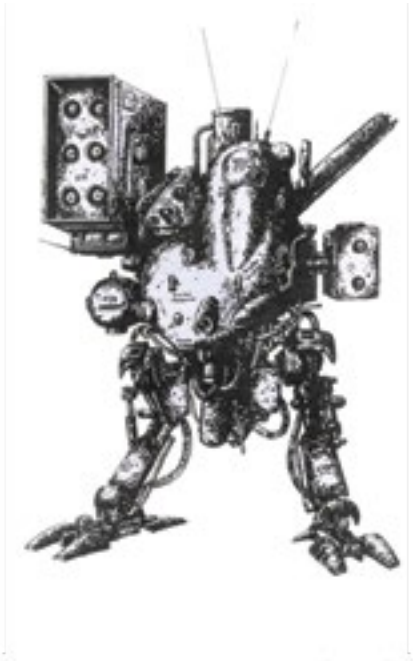
After the events of Ground Zeroes, Big Boss fell into a coma. When he eventually awoke he found that his left arm had been replaced with a prosthetic hook. A nurse noticed him and quickly alerted the doctor who revealed that Big Boss had been in the coma for nine years...





Metal Gear

Developer	Konami
Publisher	Konami
Designer	Hideo Kojima
Artist	Masami Tabata Azusa Fujimoto
Composer	Iku Mizutani Shigehiro Takenouchi Motoaki Furukawa
Platform	MSX2
Release date	July 7, 1987



200 km north of the region of Galzburg, South Africa, lay the fortress of Outer Heaven, a fortified state that had been founded by a legendary mercenary in the late 1980s. In 1995, the Western world had received intelligence that warned of a weapon of mass destruction that was supposedly being constructed deep within the fortress. High-tech Special Forces unit FOXHOUND, commanded by the legendary soldier Big Boss, sent their best agent, Gray Fox to infiltrate the stronghold. However, days later, contact with Gray Fox was lost, his final transmission consisting only of two words: 'METAL GEAR...'

With the goal of rescuing Gray Fox and uncovering the meaning of the cryptic message, rookie operative Solid Snake is sent into Outer Heaven alone.

1995

Outer Heaven Uprising

200 kilometers north of the region of Galzburg, South Africa, laid the fortress of Outer Heaven, a heavily fortified state that had been founded by a legendary mercenary in the late 1980s.

Outer Heaven Crisis

In 1995, the Western powers received intelligence that warned of a weapon of mass destruction that was supposedly being constructed deep within Outer Heaven. The U.S. Government called upon High-Tech Special Forces Unit FOXHOUND, commanded by the legendary soldier Big Boss, to infiltrate the enemy fortress, assess the situation and neutralize whatever threat the weapon posed to the West. The mission was carried out by Gray Fox, one of FOXHOUND's top agents. After successfully infiltrating Outer Heaven, Gray Fox scouted the first building of the fortress, noting the locations of the inner courtyard, cameras and elevators, along with various weapons and equipment, such as card keys and Beretta handguns. Sometime afterwards, he stumbled upon information relating to the new weapon being developed. However, the mission ended in failure when Gray Fox

was captured, though not before relaying some of the details of his reconnaissance back to FOXHOUND. His final words before his transmission was cut were simply: 'Metal Gear...'

Operation Intrude N312

A few days later, rookie operative Solid Snake was called in for his first assignment for FOXHOUND. His commanding officer, Big Boss, briefed him on the situation, and after handing him a classified document detailing Gray Fox's infiltration route, ordered Solid Snake to perform a follow up mission entitled Operation Intrude N313. His mission objectives were to rescue Fox, and to find out the truth behind Metal Gear. After dispatching him to the rough area of Outer Heaven's location, Big Boss contacted Snake via his wireless radio and reminded him that what he was about to experience is nothing like what he has experienced in battle before.



Solid Snake infiltrated Outer Heaven via an underwater insertion, and proceeded into the base, eventually managing to locate Fox with intel provided by Outer Heaven's prisoners and the Resistance leader Kyle Schneider. To get there, Snake allowed himself to be captured, and then after being thrown into a prison with all his weapons and equipment confiscated, he managed to break through a weakened wall under Big Boss's advice to get to Fox's cell next door. Gray Fox then revealed to Snake the true meaning behind Metal Gear: a walking battle tank capable of launching a nuclear missile from any kind of terrain. Luckily it was still in a hangar within the fortress and had not yet been activated. Fox told Snake to find Dr. Drago Petrovich Madnar, the creator of Metal Gear and the only person who knew how to destroy it, explaining that he should be in a prison cell at the courtyard. After breaking out of the cell, he ended up encountering the prison's warden, Shotmaker, who attacked Snake while declaring that no one had ever escaped from the prison. Snake was forced to retreat into an unlocked room due to not being able to attack Shotmaker without his equipment. After retrieving his confiscated belongings, as well as getting rid of a transmitter that was planted among his belongings, he then managed to fight Shotmaker.



Mercenary

After fighting his way through Outer Heaven mercenaries Shotmaker and Machinegun Kid, Snake traversed the rooftop of Building 1 in order to reach the inner courtyard via parachute, also donning a bomb blast suit to bypass the wind barrier. Before he could reach the veranda, however, he had to fight off a Hind D gunship stationed in his path. After destroying it with a grenade



launcher, Snake parachuted down into the courtyard, arriving at Dr. Madnar's cell, only to find it empty. However, he saved another hostage who revealed to him that Dr. Madnar was still alive, but that he had been relocated to the basement of the Building 2. While crossing the interconnecting desert between the two buildings, Snake was forced to battle a tank that had been recently deployed, using land mines to destroy it.

Afterwards, Snake arrived at the entrance to Building 2. However, he discovered a few guards stationed near the entrance making it virtually impossible to sneak

past. It turned out that the Outer Heaven personnel had become aware of FOXHOUND's attempts at infiltrating the base, so they set up a checkpoint in case anyone tried to infiltrate Building 2. Big Boss then contacted Snake and suggested that he use a disguise to get past, and also mentioned that his radio frequency has been changed to 120.13 from that point on. Snake managed to procure an enemy officer uniform and used it to sneak into the building. Afterwards, he snuck through a waterway towards a nearly submerged door and encountered an armored bulldozer, which he managed to defeat using a grenade launcher. Proceeding to the basement, he eventually found 'Dr. Madnar', who immediately revealed himself to be a decoy and activated a suicide trap. Snake quickly avoided the trap and, confused, continued his search for the real Dr. Madnar, encountering and defeating the mercenary Fire Trooper on the way.

Snake came into contact with Jennifer, another Resistance member, who helped him locate the real Dr. Madnar and provided him with a rocket launcher, which he could use to defeat the seemingly invincible Bloody Bradcyberoids, who were guarding the area near to where Dr. Madnar was being held. After destroying Bloody Brad, Snake entered Dr. Madnar's cell. However, Dr. Madnar would only tell Snake how to destroy Metal Gear if he rescued his daughter, Ellen, who had also been imprisoned. Snake made his way back to the basement of Building 2 where he was contacted by resistance member Diane, who advised

him on how to locate Ellen. She was in the basement of Building 1, but luckily the two basements were connected by an underground passageway, though it was filled with pit traps, which Snake had to avoid. Eventually rescuing Ellen, she told Snake that her father had been forced to develop Metal Gear against his will.

Metal Gear TX-55

After Snake retraced his steps, Dr. Madnar informed him that Metal Gear TX-55 was located on the 100th floor basement of Building 3, located 20 km to the north. In order to destroy it, Snake needed to place plastic explosives on its feet in a specific order. Determined to destroy Metal Gear, Snake headed to Building 3. Once there, he was ambushed by enemy forces, but managed to slip by and made his way to the elevator. However, as he drew closer to the underground base, Big Boss started to act strangely, providing faulty information that would have delayed Snake's progress, and eventually telling him to abort the mission.

Reaching the 100th floor basement, Snake found he didn't have the right card key to continue further. Contacted again by Jennifer, she informed Snake of a wall he could destroy in order to locate an oxygen tank that he

could use to swim through the drainage duct in Building 2 in order to find the required card key. Jennifer also told Snake to save her brother, and threatened not to help him anymore if her brother was harmed.

After making his way through the drainage duct, Snake was challenged by Dirty Duck who was holding the card key Snake needed. Duck hid himself behind POWs and used boomerangs to attack Snake. Snake awaited his chance to attack and took it, defeating Duck at close range. Rescuing the POWs, one of them revealed himself to be Jennifer's brother, who thanked Snake and gave him information to aid in his escape from the fortress.



Return of Fox Hounder

Heading back to the 100th floor basement of Building 3, Snake was contacted by Schneider regarding the truth behind Outer Heaven's leader, but his transmission was cut off before he was able to finish. Snake pressed on and found himself in Metal Gear's hangar. Placing explosives on its feet as per Dr. Madnar's instructions, while avoiding gun cameras, it wasn't long before Metal Gear was destroyed. Suddenly, Outer Heaven's self-destruct sequence was activated. Making his escape, Snake came face-to-face with the legendary mercenary of Outer Heaven, which turned out to be none other than Big Boss himself.

Big Boss informed Snake that he had only been sent in to gather false information. However, because Snake had achieved too much, Big Boss told him that he had crushed his ambitions and would not die alone. After a ruthless battle, Snake defeated Big Boss and quickly made his way for the escape route, with the timer for the self-destruct sequence ticking away. After successfully escaping, and with Outer Heaven exploding behind him, Solid Snake called back to HQ, informing them that Metal Gear had been destroyed, and that Operation Intrude N313 had been a success. Shortly thereafter, the South African radio station, KNK, reported breaking news of an earthquake occurring in the Galzburg region before sunrise.

Just Another Dead Soldier

It was later revealed that NATO launched a massive aerial bombardment almost immediately after the main fortress's destruction. A pinpoint strike was executed on Outer Heaven's nuclear weapons facility using bunker-busting bombs. There were even reports of nuclear blasts in the aftermath, but the truth was hidden from the media, and very few people ever learned of what really happened.

Outer Heaven was wiped from the face of the earth, killing many within the area, regardless of their ties to the regime or not. The multinational forces deemed this as an acceptable loss since the war orphans and refugees were considered a liability in their eyes. However, those who survived the bombings were rescued by Big Boss, including Resistance members who had initially been opposed to him, such as Schneider.

Big Boss later vowed that he and Solid Snake would meet again...



Snake's Revenge

Developer	Konami
Publisher	Konami
Designer	A. Nozaki Takeshi Fujimoto
Composer	Tsutomu Ogura
Platform	Nintendo Entertainment System
Release date	April 1990



This game is a **non-canonical** entry in the Metal Gear series

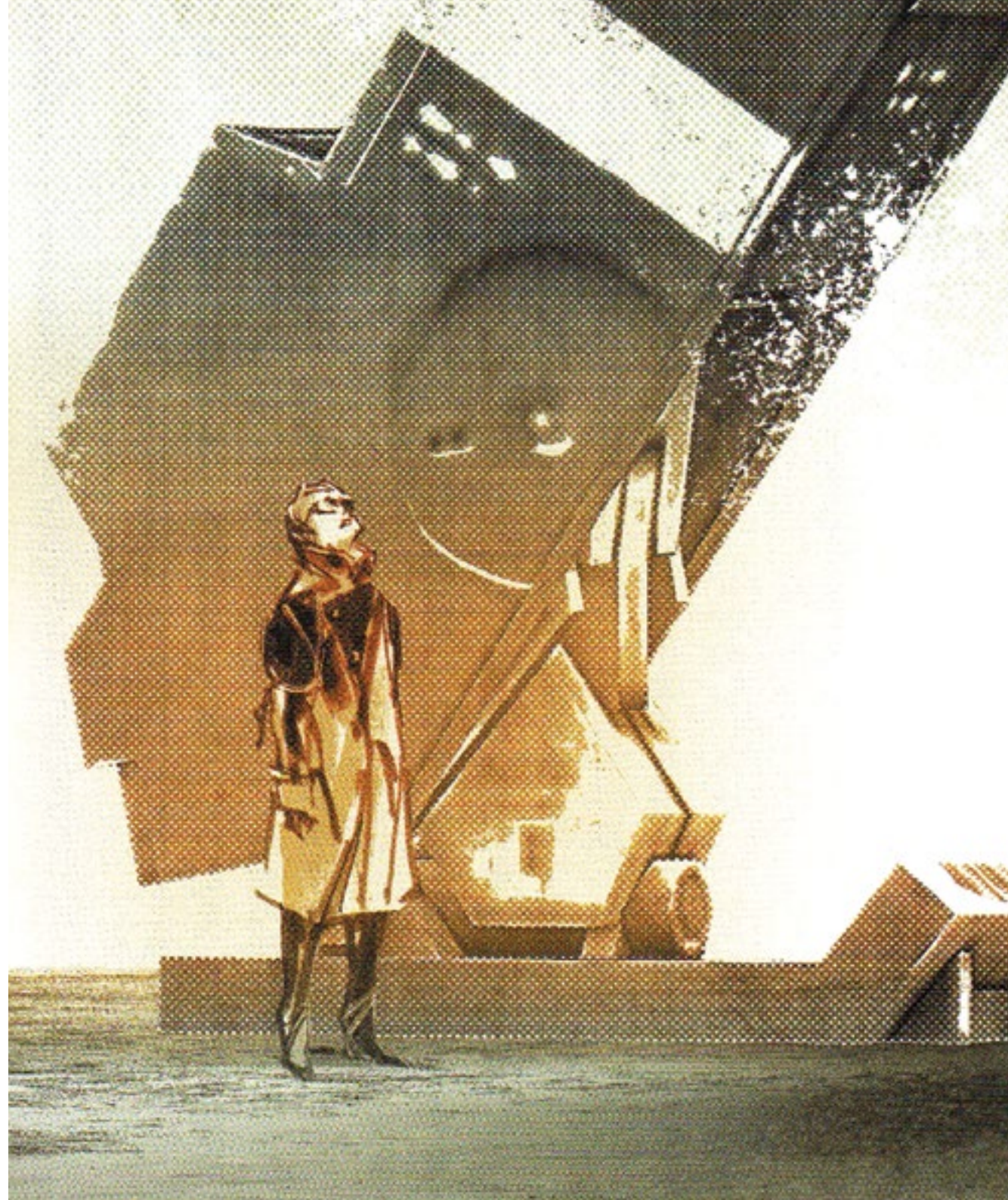


Three years after the events of Operation Intrude N313, the United States Government discovers that a hostile nation in the Middle East may have obtained plans for Metal Gear and are secretly constructing weapons of mass-destruction. Solid Snake, the FOXHOUND operative responsible for the downfall of Outer Heaven, is recruited to lead a three men team consisting of himself and fellow operatives John Turner and Nick Myer, on a mission to infiltrate the enemy's base. The codename of the mission is Operation 747.

1998 [independent timeline]
Operation 747

Three years after the events of Operation Intrude N313, the United States Government discovered that a hostile nation might have obtained plans for Metal Gear and were secretly constructing weapons of mass-destruction. Solid Snake, the FOXHOUND operative responsible for the downfall of Outer Heaven, was recruited to lead a three men team consisting of himself and fellow operatives John Turner and Nick Myer, on a mission to infiltrate the enemy base. The codename of the mission was Operation 747.

After infiltrating the enemy's sphere of influence in the jungle, Snake, Myer, and Turner split up. Upon being briefed by his allies, including their helicopter pilot, Snake traversed through the jungle, evading searchlights and enemy gyrocopters until he reached the entrance of the warehouse, which was heavily guarded. Enacting their plan: Turner let himself get captured by the guards, acting as a decoy that allowed Snake to infiltrate the complex. The infiltration was successful and Snake learned that the enemy was indeed manufacturing mass-produced versions of Metal Gear and were now shipping them for deployment. After overcoming all adversaries, including a quarterback mercenary team and reaching the docks, Snake received a call from Myer informing him that Turner was taken aboard the same cargo ship that was housing the mass-produced Metal Gears.



Snake boarded the ship which immediately set sail. Snake found no trace of Turner, but learned that the new Metal Gear models couldn't be destroyed by conventional means, and that he should sink the ship instead. However, he first had to fight off a trio of grenadiers who had intended to bury Snake. Snake proceeded to the cargo holds of the ship, and detonated an ammunition cache. He made his way to the deck and was rescued by the helicopter pilot moments before the ship sank to the bottom of the ocean. The pilot informed Snake that Myer had been captured as well, and that his last known whereabouts were the rail yards outside of the enemy's main base. He also informed Snake that the enemy had been working on a new model of Metal Gear known as Metal Gear 2. The pilot told Snake to contact their double agent, Jennifer, on the inside. He then dropped Snake off.

Snake located a hidden underground passage which led to a train station. Snake boarded the train, and received a call from a captive Turner, who led him to his whereabouts. After making his way past numerous suspicious traps, Snake finally reached Turner's holding area, and as he freed him, Turner revealed himself to be an impostor that has taken the real Turner's place. The impostor attacked Snake, but was killed. The train stopped, and Snake used the opportunity to disembark. Snake then received a call from Myer stating that the operation was still a 'go' in spite of Turner's disappearance.

Still trudging through the exterior defenses of the fortress, Snake received a call from Jennifer, asking to meet with him inside the main base. After reaching the bridge connecting the exterior of the fortress to the stronghold of the fortress, Snake received another call from Jennifer stating she's inside. After successfully infiltrating the main base, Jennifer called Snake yet again, telling Snake that Myer was ahead of him, and that the three of them should meet up somewhere. She also informed Snake that the enemy commander planned to launch a nuclear attack using the newest Metal Gear prototype, Metal Gear 2, and that he's on the top floor of the fortress.

However, while reaching the heart of the fortress, Myer became careless and was fatally wounded by enemy soldiers. Snake found a dying Myer, who informed him that Jennifer's cover was blown by the enemy and revealed the identity of the enemy commander: Big Boss. The same mercenary who issued the construction of the first Metal Gear, Big Boss was being kept alive via a life support system in his lair, and in order to defeat him, Myer told Snake that he must be lured out. Myer then dies. Snake finally confronted Big Boss in his lair. Big Boss told Snake that he wanted revenge for the injuries that led to him becoming a cyborg. He then attacked. After sustaining enough damage, Big Boss transformed into a tall cyborg and boasted that he didn't have any weak spots. Snake lured him away from his lair and defeated him using mines (Big Boss's soles were his weak spot).

After Big Boss's demise, an alarm sounded and an announcement was made that Metal Gear 2 was operational. Snake proceeded through Big Boss's lair and untied the captive Jennifer, who led him to the complex where Metal Gear 2 was housed. Snake exited the top of the tower and proceeded via another gondola to the complex. After Snake marked a reinforced door to the complex with a smoke bomb he had located earlier, the helicopter pilot destroyed the reinforced door to the complex, allowing Snake's passage inside.

w

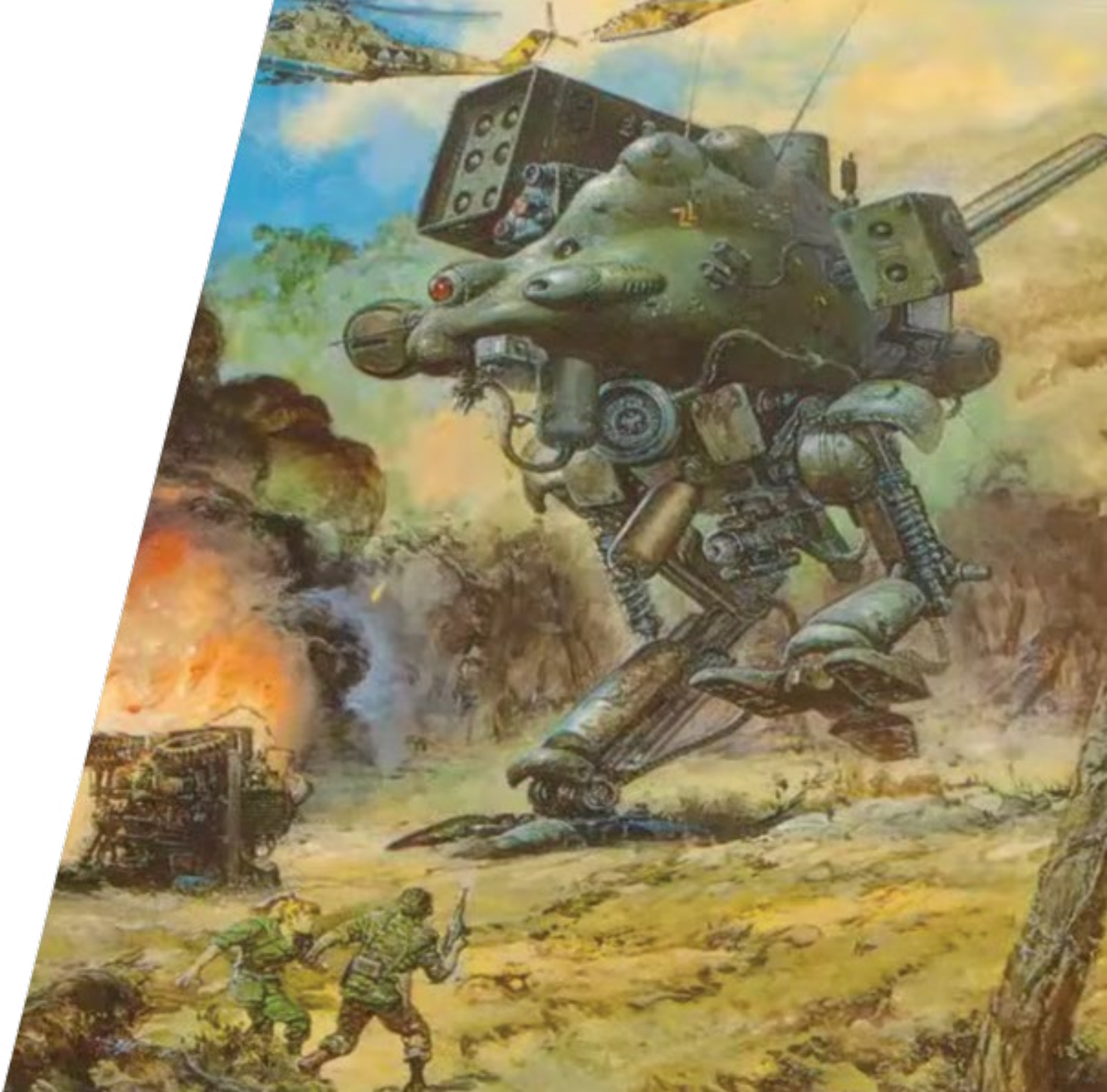
Another set of alarms went off, and Snake heard another announcement: Metal Gear 2 was targeting New York, Tokyo, and Moscow. Snake navigated a small maze within the complex and arrived to Metal Gear 2's housing area. Snake couldn't reach the autonomous bipedal tank, so he fired a series of remote control missiles through an air duct at Metal Gear 2's undercarriage. After enough damage was inflicted, Metal Gear 2 was destroyed.

In the aftermath of Operation 747, the United Nations declared World Peace Day. John Turner was declared MIA and removed from Navy records, while Nick Myer was posthumously promoted three ranks.



Metal Gear 2: Solid Snake

Developer	Konami
Publisher	Konami
Designer	Hideo Kojima
Artist	Shuko Iwamoto Tae Yabu Tomohiro Nishio
Writer	Hideo Kojima
Composer	Tsuyoshi Sekito Masahiro Ikariko Mutsuhiko Izumi Yuko Kurahashi Tomoya Tomita Kazuhiko Uehara Yuji Takenouchi Tsuyoshi Sekito
Platform	MSX2
Release date	July 20, 1990



By 1999, the Cold War had thawed, and it seemed nuclear proliferation would soon be a thing of the past. Despite this, all was not well in the world. A series of shocks to the oil market spurred the development of new high-tech energy sources, including fusion power. However, most vehicles still relied on oil for power. Oil reserves were at a critical low, and the world community was prepared to take drastic measures, either by drilling into sand and shale for more oil, despite the difficulty — or moving on to renewable fuels.

Such steps proved unnecessary when Czech scientist, Dr. Kio Marv, successfully bio-engineered a new species of algae, OILIX, that could produce petroleum-grade hydrocarbons with little expense and effort. Marv presented the algae to the World Energy Conference in Prague, and was on his way to a demonstration in the United States when he was kidnapped by soldiers from Zanzibar Land. NATO discovered that Zanzibar Land’s leaders planned to hold the world hostage by controlling the supply of oil, and some good old-fashioned nuclear brinkmanship, courtesy of a stockpile of nukes.

Solid Snake was brought out of retirement by FOXHOUND’s new commander, Roy Campbell, and was sent to Zanzibar Land to rescue Dr. Marv.

1999 Zanzibar Land Disturbance

By 1999, the Cold War had thawed, and it seemed nuclear proliferation would soon be a thing of the past. Despite this, all was not well in the world. A military junta came to power in Zanzibar Land, a small nation bordering Russia, China, and Central Asia. After gaining its independence from Russia in the Mercenary War, Zanzibar Land began attacking nuclear weapons disposal sites around the world, seizing those weapons that were still intact, and becoming one of the world's few nuclear powers. It then began to invade its neighbors at will.

Meanwhile, a series of shocks to the oil market spurred the development of new high-tech energy sources, including fusion power. However, most vehicles still relied on oil for power. Oil reserves were at a critical low, and the world community was prepared to take drastic measures, either by drilling into sand and shale for more oil, despite the difficulty -- or moving on to renewable fuels. Such steps proved unnecessary when Czech scientist, Dr. Kio Marv, successfully bio-engineered a new species of algae, OILIX, that could produce petroleum-grade hydrocarbons with little expense and effort. Marv presented the algae to the World Energy Conference in Prague, and was on his way to a demonstration in the United States when he was kidnapped by agents of Zanzibar Land.

NATO discovered that Zanzibar Land's leaders planned to hold the world hostage by controlling the supply of oil, along with the threat of nuclear war, in an era known as the Zanzibar Land Disturbance.



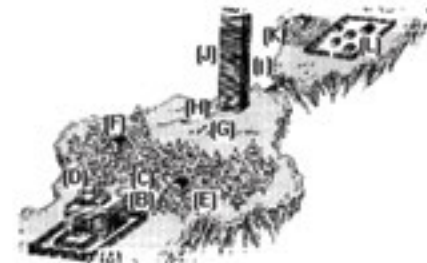
Operation Intrude F014

Solid Snake was brought out of retirement by FOXHOUND's new commander, Roy Campbell, and sent into Zanzibar Land to rescue Dr. Marv.

Snake was able to penetrate the heavily fortified borders of Zanzibar Land via a nighttime HAHO (High Altitude-High Opening) jump, using a radar-stealth parachute. This was carried out at an altitude of 35,000 feet, on the Afghan border, from a C-130 Hercules aircraft. During the time of the HAHO jump, it also had a full moon during that time, ensuring achievement of CAVO

(Cloud-Bottom Altitude, Visibility Over) and the high altitude environment of the jump also allowed for perfect visibility and also allowed for eyevision use, with calm winds as well as having a stable Minovsky density to allow radar use. In order to aid Snake's insertion, a simultaneous diversion operation was conducted along the Chinese border.

Making a successful jump, and avoiding frostbite on the way down, Snake then advanced on foot from the drop point to the base of the south-facing cliff wall. Free-climbing his way to the top, being careful to evade enemy sensors, he eventually reached the infiltration point at the front



of the enemy fortress. Throughout the mission, Snake also transmitted messages to FOXHOUND via microwave satellites used by both Eastern and Western forces, of which command would be available around 24 hours real time, and would communicate via special frequencies. If Snake was captured during the mission, however, he wouldn't receive any assistance negotiations nor any rescue activity as the mission was never covered under the conditions of the Warsaw Treaty.

Zanzibar Breeze

Infiltrating the first of Zanzibar Land's large building complexes, Snake was contacted by Holly White, a CIA operative posing as a journalist, who promised to help in any way she could. Making his way up to the third floor of the main building, thinking Dr. Kio Marv was held there due to his transmitter. However, he was instead confronted by Black Ninja, who had disguised himself as Dr. Marv, explaining that Zanzibar Land had already deduced a while ago that FOXHOUND was using the transmitter, declaring it to be inferior. Snake easily defeated Black Ninja in battle. Black Ninja revealed to Snake that he was Kyle Schneider, the leader of the Resistance at Outer Heaven who helped Snake during his mission there four years earlier. He told Snake what happened after they had lost contact. Schneider told Snake that unbeknownst to him, NATO commenced a bombing raid on what was Outer Heaven after the success of Operation Intrude N313. This led to the deaths of many war orphans and refugees, along with many Resistance members and Outer Heaven personnel alike. He also told Snake that he survived but was captured by a clean up crew of NATO and used as a guinea pig for NASA's Black Ninja project.

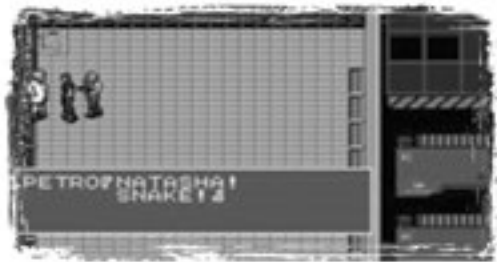
He also hinted that Big Boss not only survived, but was also the leader of Zanzibar Land and saved the surviving members of the Resistance. After the Black Ninja unit disbanded, he and many members fled to

Zanzibar Land to assist in the Mercenary War. Schneider's last words to Snake was a clue on how to find Marv's whereabouts: 'Follow the Green Beret.'

Finding the man in the Green Beret, Snake patiently followed him into the jungle behind the main building before coming into a clearing, with a small building sitting in the middle. Sneaking past the Green Beret, Snake entered the building to find a large cell, completely empty. Snake could hear a strange knocking, and was contacted by Campbell who told Snake that the knocking was tap code. After figuring out a radio frequency from the knocks, Snake called the person on his radio. Snake discovered that the person who was knocking was not Dr. Marv, but Dr. Drago Petrovich Madnar, the Metal Gear developer from Outer Heaven. Madnar claimed he had been captured once again in order to build another Metal Gear tank: Metal Gear D. Snake, shocked by this latest development, was also told that the leader of Zanzibar Land was none other than Big Boss, the former leader of Outer Heaven, himself. Madnar then advised Snake to locate Marv, as his heart condition would make his dying from Zanzibar Land's interrogation a significant likelihood, and also supplied the frequency of one of his zoologist friends, Johan Jacobsen. He, however, also advised Snake to leave him behind, as the prison walls could not be blown apart by explosives.

Snake then attempted to cross the Nariko Desert, when he was contacted by an anonymous caller identifying

himself only as '[Snake's] #1 Fan,' warning him about mines being placed in the vicinity. Upon evading the mines and soldiers on the singing sand-laced desert, Snake encountered a Hind D, which took off and engaged Snake. As he had absolutely no way to fend off the Hind, Snake was forced to retreat, and acted on advice from Holly to locate Stinger missiles in a small armory located in the swamp. He then crossed the shallow areas of the swamp, based on a tip from one of the children nearby regarding big trucks driving through the otherwise bottomless swamp. He then encountered the mercenary Running Man, who proceeded to not only demonstrate his speed to Snake, but also activate the armory's nerve gas, stating he'll only turn them off if Snake defeats him in battle. Snake eventually did so by placing mines at Running Man's feet, using his own speed against him. However, he was unable to find any Stinger missiles. A kid inside the armory, however, informed him that the Stinger missiles were moved over to the Zanzibar Building to be equipped onto the Zanzibar Land tanks. Snake then traveled back to the hangar area and found the Stinger missiles, returning to the Hind D's heliport and proceeded to shoot it down with it.



Reprieve of the Doctor

Afterwards, Snake proceeded to the second building of the fortress. As soon as he stepped inside, he was called by Holly who had been captured by the enemy. She asked Snake for help, but he didn't know her exact location. Working from her clues, Snake eventually found and rescued her. She told Snake that she had a clue



to Marv's whereabouts: a carrier pigeon on the roof. Snake immediately headed to the roof, defeating Red Blaster on the way. Using his rations, Snake coerced the pigeon towards him. Finding a piece of paper attached to the pigeon's leg, it had the message 'HELP! WIS. OHIO' printed on it. Looking at it, Snake, with some help from Campbell as well as his FOXHOUND drill sergeant, Master Miller, realized it was Marv's radio frequency upside down. Calling Marv on 140.51, Snake successfully managed to make contact with Marv. Unfortunately for Snake, Marv didn't speak English. Contacting Madnar, Snake was told to look for an STB agent named Gustava Heffner, who was acting as their bodyguard. Snake was also

told that Gustava had managed to steal an enemy uniform and that she should be somewhere in the main Zanzibar Land building.

Heading over there, and proceeding to the top floor, Snake waited for Gustava to enter the woman's bathroom, and snuck in, making contact with her. Snake immediately recognized her, realizing she was an ex-Olympic figure skater who won the gold at the Calgary Olympics. After making sure Marv was safe, and discovering that the prison was north of the tower building, they descended into the sewers. They eventually found an elevator which led them to Madnar's cell, and the three continued on to the bridge leading to the prison building. Along the way, Madnar asked for a quick bathroom break. Accepting his request, Snake and Gustava sat and awaited his return. As they waited, Gustava and Snake made some small talk. Gustava told Snake about her past, how she used to be engaged to a man named Frank Hunter, but when she attempted to defect to America she was refused asylum and sent away. Snake also admitted when asked if he was married that he never had a family. Since then, she joined the STB and had even killed a man. Snake attempted to comfort her, before Madnar returned. The trio carried on, eventually making their way out of the sewers.

Under the Cloud of Darkness

Upon reaching the suspension bridge leading to the detention camp, Madnar easily made his way across. As Gustava started to cross, a missile blew up the suspension bridge, launching Gustava back onto Snake's side of the crevice. As armed guards took Madnar away, Metal Gear D appeared piloted by none other than Gray Fox. He demanded that Snake leave Zanzibar Land, or he would kill him. Tending to Gustava (who was far beyond saving), she thanked Snake for all his help, and gave him her brooch, which could change into a key at different temperatures. Snake was now more determined than ever to defeat both Gray Fox and Big Boss.



After fighting his way through the Four Horsemen, Jungle Evil and Night Fright, Snake eventually made it into Dr. Marv's cell. Unfortunately, Snake arrived too late, as he found Dr. Marv's corpse. Marv was unable to survive the repeated torture sessions, and Madnar, also within the cell, was unable to save him. Just before Snake could retrieve the OILIX formula left by Dr. Marv, Holly revealed via a

radio message that Dr. Madnar was not captured by Zanzibar Land's forces, but was in Zanzibar Land voluntarily overseeing the development of the new Metal Gear. After the truth came out, Madnar admitted that he accidentally killed Marv and caused Gustava's death, then proceeded to attack Snake. However, he was not successful in killing him, and was easily defeated. However, he still needed to access the locker, so Snake had to traverse back to the Zanzibar Building by stowing away on one of the Zanzibar Land transport trucks. He eventually went over to the sauna and used the key to open up the locker. However, one more obstacle remained within the locker: a nest of venomous Zanzibar Hamsters. Snake, under the advice of Johan Jacobsen, used one of his B3 ration units as bait for the hamster nest to come out before disposing of them, leaving him clear to enter their nesting hole and retrieve the OILIX formula.



With the OILIX formula now safely in Snake's hands, Snake made his way out of the cell, However, Dr. Madnar stopped him, and managed to tell him how to defeat Metal Gear D: the legs had weaker armor compared to the rest of

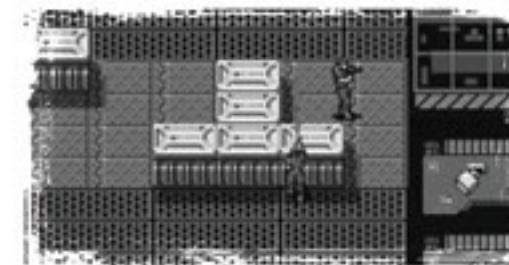
the body, and were especially weak to grenades. Just then a trap door was activated with Snake landing in Zanzibar Land's lower basement area, where he was confronted by Gray Fox piloting Metal Gear D once again. After a fierce battle, Snake was successful in destroying Metal Gear. Unfortunately, the resulting explosion causes Snake's equipment to catch fire, and Gray Fox used the opportunity to recover the OILIX formula cartridge, telling



Snow to 'Burn in Hell!' Forced to remove all of his gear, he then went after Fox. Entering a door to his right, he then found himself in a minefield with Fox. Snake was contacted by military expert George Kasler who told Snake about Fox's real name, Frank Jaeger. Snake suddenly realized that the Frank Hunter whom Gustava had been engaged to was Gray Fox. The two suddenly engaged in hand-to-hand combat against each other, with Snake eventually emerging victorious. Fox told Snake about his past, about how Big Boss saved him several times, and how he needed war, and couldn't live without it. Fox 'died', with Snake reassuring him that Gustava was waiting for him on the other side.

Farewell

After defeating Fox, Snake retrieved Marv's cartridge, where he was then taunted by a familiar voice. Snake followed the voice to its source and was confronted by the renowned mercenary leader himself, Big Boss. Snake declared that he had come to Zanzibar Land to get rid of the nightmares that he had endured since Outer Heaven, with Big Boss replying that they would never go away. Big Boss explained that once someone has experienced the taste of battle, they could never leave it, and that everything he had had done was to give Snake a place for it. He then told Snake about his viewpoint on a logical system: 'Start a war, fan its flames, and create victims... then save them, train them... and feed them back onto the battlefield.' Big Boss continued on, stating that soldiers like them could never lead normal lives, that it was impossible. They only felt truly alive during battle and nothing else would ever satisfy their cravings. Solid Snake then decided to kill Big Boss to free himself from his grip as well as to put aside his nightmares. Big Boss had one final speech to give before their battle.



It doesn't matter who wins here.
Our fight will continue. The loser will be liberated
from the battlefield, and the survivor will live out
the rest of his days as a soldier.

– Big Boss to Solid Snake

Having lost all of his equipment and with no weapons
at his disposal, Snake was forced to improvise and made
a makeshift flamethrower consisting of a cigarette lighter
and lacquer spray. Taking Big Boss by surprise, Snake was
able to defeat him, for the second and last time. Snake
and Holly then proceeded to leave, but they first had to



fight their way out to the extraction point. However, their
getaway pilot Charlie, was running late, so they were forced
to hold off an entire platoon of guards until they eventually
ran out of ammo. They were cornered by several guards
and it appeared that Snake and Holly were done for.
However, at the last second, Charlie, piloting a Sikorsky
HH-64 Dragoon, eliminated all the guards using the
gunship's 7.62 mm machineguns. Snake and Holly then

escaped together with Charlie, and delivered the OILIX
formula to Campbell. After refusing Campbell's offer to
return to FOXHOUND, citing that his nightmares are over,
he also confirmed to Holly and Campbell that the MSX
cartridge that he retrieved was indeed the one Marv hid the
OILIX formula inside, citing that Marv signed his signature
backwards on the bootup screen as the proof needed.

After the situation had been defused, Snake
disappeared into the Alaskan wilderness, not to be heard
from again for several years....



Metal Gear: Ghost Babel

Developer	Konami Computer Entertainment Japan
Publisher	Konami
Director	Shinta Nojiri
Producer	Hideo Kojima Motoyuki Yoshioka
Designer	Shinta Nojiri
Artist	Ikuya Nakamura Yoji Shinkawa
Writer	Tomokazu Fukushima
Composer	Norihiko Hibino Kazuki Muraoka
Platform	Game Boy Color
Release date	April 27, 2000



This game is a **non-canonical** entry in the Metal Gear series



Seven years after the events of Outer Heaven Uprising, a C-5 Galaxy transport plane containing a U.S. funded Metal Gear prototype codenamed ‘GANDER” is hijacked en route to South America by a dangerous separatist rebel group, located in the small South African country of Gindra, known as the Gindra Liberation Front, led by General Augustine Eguabon. The group plans to use Metal Gear to finally win the civil war it has been engaged in. Roy Campbell is called in to convince retired FOXHOUND agent Solid Snake to come out of retirement for one last mission: to infiltrate Gindra and destroy Metal Gear. Snake refuses initially until Campbell reveals that GLF’s fortress, Galuade, was formerly Outer Heaven, where Snake had destroyed the original TX-55 Metal Gear years ago. Snake consents to go through with the mission, commanded by National Security Adviser Steve Gardner. Snake then met his support staff, consisting of Campbell, Mei Ling, mercenary expert known as ‘Weasel’ and Brian McBride, CIA agent. Snake is also informed that the United States Army’s Delta Force, at the behest of General John Parker, Army Chief of Staff, was already inside the fortress, and that Snake had to carry out the mission in concert with them.

Snake HALO jumps into enemy territory, where he successfully infiltrates Galuade.

2002 [independent timeline] Galuade Incident

In 2000, five years after the events of the Outer Heaven Uprising, the American special forces squad Black Chamber, a replacement for FOXHOUND regarding black ops missions, had undergone a secret mission to quell a terrorist takeover in South America that resulted in a Metal Gear being hijacked. After the success of their mission, they returned to America, only to be caught in an ambush by FOXHOUND, at the time led by Roy Campbell, which left only four known survivors: Marionette Owl, Pyro Bison, Slasher Hawk, and the group commander, Black Arts Viper. They subsequently swore revenge.

Two years later, a C-5 Galaxy transport plane containing a U.S. funded Metal Gear prototype codenamed 'GANDER' is hijacked en route to South America by a dangerous separatist rebel group, located in the small South African country of Gindra, known as the Gindra Liberation Front, led by General Augustine Eguabon. The group planned to use Metal Gear to finally win the civil war it has been engaged in. Roy Campbell, is called in to convince retired FOXHOUND agent Solid Snake to come out of retirement for one last mission: to infiltrate Gindra and destroy Metal Gear. Snake refuses initially until Campbell reveals that GLF's fortress, Galuade, was formerly Outer Heaven, where Snake had destroyed the original TX-55 Metal Gear years ago. Snake consents to go through with the mission, commanded by

National Security Adviser Steve Gardner. Snake then met his support staff, consisting of Campbell, Mei Ling, mercenary expert known as 'Weasel' and Brian McBride, CIA agent. Snake is also informed that the United States Army's Delta Force, at the behest of General John Parker, Army Chief of Staff, was already inside the fortress, and that Snake had to carry out the mission in concert with them.

Snake HALO jumps into enemy territory, where he successfully infiltrates Galuade. Once inside, however, Snake is contacted by Delta Force operative Chris Jenner, who told Snake that Delta Force had been ambushed and massacred by the mercenary group named Black Chamber. Chris was the only survivor. Chris then advises him to enter the watchtower and meet up with her, and also tells him to enter the watchtower via the sewer system. Snake then entered through the sewer system upon locating it, but then discovered to his confusion rats scurrying away. He later overheard two soldiers revealing that they have been reassigned from the sewers and have to evacuate as soon as possible, due to a squall coming in that was potent enough to send floodwaters that will sweep away anything caught in its path. Snake then used the ladders to avoid the floodwaters until he arrived at the ladder to the watchtower. He then proceeded to search for Jenner while avoiding the soldiers until discovering her. Snake and Chris agree to work together, and Chris leaves to investigate Galuade's power plant. Snake sets off in search of Metal Gear's chief engineer, Jimmy Harks. But along the way, he



meets his first member of Black Chamber, Slasher Hawk. After killing him, Snake reaches the prison barracks where Jimmy is being kept. Snake rescued Jimmy and learned that Metal Gear fires its nukes via a rail gun that consumes insane amounts of power. Suddenly the power in the barracks goes out. Metal Gear is about to fire. Snake rushes to disable the weapons before the rail gun is fully charged (leaving Jimmy's safety to Chris) and he hurries to reach Metal Gear before it can fire when he confronts and defeats yet another member of Black Chamber, Marionette Owl. Before he dies, Owl reveals that Black Chamber was betrayed by the U.S. Government two years ago, in a mission commanded by 'Anonymous', a man that they have vowed vengeance upon.

Escaping the barracks, Snake discovers that Metal Gear is already above ground. Rushing to its location, Snake is waylaid by an armed helicopter being piloted by Black Chamber's leader, Black Arts Viper. Then it's too late. Metal Gear fires its warhead. Viper leaves and Snake flees the area under heavy bombardment when he learns the terrorist's intentions: the missile Metal Gear GANDER had just fired was set to land in an unpopulated region of Nevada - a test to prove the GLF had the capability to make a nuclear strike. 'The General' gives the U.S. three hours to pull out all of its peacekeeping troops and recognize Gindran sovereignty or else it will fire another nuke - this time at a major population center. To prevent Metal Gear GANDER from firing another warhead, Snake goes to destroy the power

plant when he suddenly loses contact with Jimmy and Chris. However, Chris is able to contact Snake later on. She tells him how they were ambushed, and Jimmy was recaptured but she escaped. After consoling her, Snake is attacked by another member of Black Chamber, Pyro Bison. Snake succeeds in defeating him, but before he dies he makes several revelations to Snake: first, that Black Chamber was a special forces group that performed missions FOXHOUND would've taken on normally, had the group not become too famous after Operation Intrude N313, and that there is a spy in their ranks. Five members of Black Chamber survived 'Anonymous' ambush. Snake destroys the power plant, but as he escapes, he sees a surprising sight: Jimmy in handcuffs with a dead soldier next to him. Jimmy reveals that he escaped from captivity when the plant was blown up, alongside another prisoner, who was another operative from Delta Force. When suddenly Jimmy's handcuffs exploded, killing him.

These revelations prompt McBride to accuse Chris of being the fifth member of Black Chamber, a fact that Snake argues passionately against. However, when he attempts to contact her, he receives no reply. With a heavy heart, Snake continues on his mission, when he's attacked by the same armed helicopter, this time being piloted by the General's second in command, Sophie N'dram. Snake destroys the helicopter and wounds her, but refuses to kill her. She reveals that Chris is still alive, but has been captured by Viper. Snake proceeds to the underground

maintenance base, where Metal Gear is being kept, but before he can reach the dread weapon, he's confronted by Viper. Viper reveals to Snake that Black Chamber was assigned to a mission two years ago by the government to recover Metal Gear, which at that point had been seized by a South American terrorist group. Fearing that Black Chamber's existence and Metal Gear's construction would spell doom for the U.S., certain government officials ordered in FOXHOUND to ambush and wipe out Black Chamber when they returned home. Five members escaped (but now only two remain, thanks to Snake). Viper and Snake proceed to fight, but Snake proves the victor. As the room explodes behind them, Snake and Chris escape. Chris revealed that she escaped Delta Force's massacre because she wasn't with the group at that time. She'd been given special orders by John Parker to destroy all data on 'Project Babel' and Outer Heaven and to assassinate 'the General.' Charged with finding an escape route, Chris leaves and Snake proceeds to finally fight Metal Gear GANDER.

He enters the hangar where Metal Gear is being kept, and finds the General already there. He activates Metal Gear and history repeats itself, as Snake battles Metal Gear in the hundredth floor basement of Outer Heaven. After destroying Metal Gear, the General reveals to Snake the truth about the U.S., GLF, and Outer Heaven: Outer Heaven was a U.S. funded project, established to investigate anti-U.S. forces at the time. The field commander of the Outer Heaven project, Big Boss was a loose cannon,

however, and rebelled causing Operation Intrude N313. After Outer Heaven was destroyed by Snake, the relationship between Gindra and the U.S. continued, up until Project Babel. Project Babel's objective was to establish the U.S. as the sole super power in Africa. The project was created by the Army Chief of Staff, John Parker. After that revelation, the General gives Snake the disk containing the project data before dying. It seems that it's all over, but Snake is again confronted by Viper, who reveals that he now knew the identity of 'Anonymous', thanks to the General's speech, and that Campbell was in command of FOXHOUND the night Black Chamber was terminated. Finally the fifth member of Black Chamber reveals himself: Brian McBride. But there is still one final revelation: There was more to Metal Gear than just the rail gun; Metal Gear GANDER was programmed to control seven nuclear equipped satellites, able to launch nukes from orbit. As the elevator begins to ascend to the surface, where the satellites will become activated, Snake and Viper have a final duel to the death. Snake proves to be the victor, as Viper finally falls dead to the ground and the nuke system is deactivated.

Snake receives a call from Campbell, who tells Snake that he's sorry, he didn't know that Black Chamber was an American unit until after the whole thing was over. Weasel tells Snake that he killed McBride. Upon hearing Campbell's past with Black Chamber as well as that he had been blackmailed into participating in the operation

by Gardner due to being a former Deputy Director of Intelligence at the CIA, Snake, remembering what both Viper and Eguabon stated about the history of Project Babel and its ties to both his missions, deduced, with Weasel confirming, that Gardner is 'Anonymous.' Project Babel was actually created by Gardner, but he lost control of it after Metal Gear was seized by the South American terrorists. Control was transferred to Parker. Gardner planned the whole operation to disgrace Parker and get control of Project Babel returned to him. Weasel was actually under direct orders from Gardner the entire time. However, he decides to let everyone go free, instead of killing them. Chris reappears with a jeep that she found and she and Snake drive off together. Along the way, Chris explains that she joined the Army because she felt it was the place where an absolute right and wrong can be found, but she realized that she needs to look for it and not borrow it. Snake then explains that he endured something similar: he thought he would settle the score of his past by returning to Outer Heaven, but it turns out he only wanted death by returning, because he was afraid of seeing what he truly was. He does admit that, thanks to Chris, he found his salvation and intends to forgive himself for his mistakes. He also states that he intends to return to the United States, even though FOXHOUND is most likely waiting to ambush him, to confront the faceless men who played chess with people's lives (referring to Parker and Gardner) and find out what he was like, and after making them pay, he will return to Chris.

Metal Gear Solid

Developer	Konami Computer Entertainment Japan
Publisher	Konami
Director	Hideo Kojima
Producer	Hideo Kojima Motoyuki Yoshioka
Artist	Yoji Shinkawa
Writer	Hideo Kojima Tomokazu Fukushima
Composer	Kazuki Muraoka Hiroyuki Togo Takanari Ishiyama Lee Jeon Myung Maki Kirioka
Platform	PlayStation
Release date	September 3, 1998



During a training mission in February 2005 on Shadow Moses Island, a remote island off the coast of Alaska containing a nuclear weapons facility, FOXHOUND and the Next-Generation Special Forces rebelled against the United States Government, under the command of Liquid Snake. Their target was the advanced weapon system Metal Gear REX, a gigantic robotic weapons platform able to independently launch a nuclear warhead at any target on the face of the planet. Their demand was the body of the greatest soldier who ever lived, Big Boss, which, through gene therapy, they could use to create an army of ultimate soldiers.

With the safety of the entire world at stake, at the request of the Secretary of Defense, Colonel Roy Campbell, the former commander of FOXHOUND, summoned Solid Snake out of retirement for one last solo covert operation to stop Liquid.

2005 Shadow Moses Incident

The Shadow Moses Incident was an armed revolt against the United States, initiated by FOXHOUND and the Next-Generation Special Forces on Shadow Moses Island, Alaska. Under the command of Liquid Snake, FOXHOUND and the NGSF formed the Sons of Big Boss, and captured a secret nuclear weapons facility on the island in February 2005, the night before the signing of the START III Accord. Initially deployed to oversee a weapons testing exercise, FOXHOUND took DARPA Chief Donald Anderson and Arms-Tech President Kenneth Baker hostage, along with a soldier who refused to participate in the insurrection.

Introduction

After threatening to launch a nuclear strike with the American-developed Metal Gear REX, the Sons of Big Boss demanded that the U.S. Government hand over the remains of Big Boss and \$1 billion dollars, issuing a deadline of 24 hours. The Genome Soldiers of the NGSF had been subject to advanced gene therapy, involving the use of Big Boss's 'soldier genes' to enhance their combat skills and senses. Big Boss's DNA was considered to be a highly secretive and sensitive project and the U.S. government could not allow

this information to be revealed to the public due to the controversial nature of the genetic enhancement of soldiers. The DNA was also considered a priceless treasure to the U.S. military, and the government could not allow it to fall into the wrong hands.

Five hours later, by the request of Defense Secretary Jim Houseman, FOXHOUND's former commander Roy Campbell enlisted Solid Snake to help thwart the terrorist threat. Sending armed soldiers to Snake's retreat in Twin Lakes, he was later brought aboard the Ohio-class nuclear submarine USS Discovery, in the Bering Sea. Forced to strip down to his underwear, Campbell explained the situation to a reluctant Snake, while Naomi Hunter gave him an injection of nanomachines. Campbell successfully convinced Snake of the gravity of the situation, also admitting that his own participation in the mission was because his niece, rookie soldier Meryl Silverburgh, was among the hostages. Persuaded to infiltrate Shadow Moses in a solo covert operation, Snake's objectives were to rescue DARPA Chief Donald Anderson and ArmsTech President Kenneth Baker, learn the terrorists' nuclear launch capabilities, and prevent them from carrying out their threat, for which he would receive radio support from military analyst Nastasha Romanenko. Snake agreed to the task under the conditions that he only take orders directly from Campbell, and that Campbell provide full disclosure regarding the details of the mission.

Intruder

An hour later, Snake began his infiltration of Shadow Moses. The military had Snake make an underwater insertion via an SDV (Swimmer Delivery Vehicle), to avoid the Discovery being detected by enemy sonar, which along with the weather conditions, negated the possibility of an air insertion. Two F-16 fighters were scrambled from Galena AFB as a diversionary tactic, allowing Snake to sneak in undetected. Snake reported his successful infiltration to Campbell and Naomi by radio, and was introduced to data analyst Mei Ling, who explained the operation of his Soliton Radar.

Snake later witnessed the terrorist leader, Liquid, board and take off in a Hind D gunship, causing he and Campbell to ponder over the presence of Russian weapons on the base. Infiltrating the base's tank hangar via the air ducts, Snake was contacted by his former mentor, Master Miller, who had volunteered to offer radio support after learning of the mission from Campbell. Snake then eavesdropped on a conversation between two Genome Soldiers where he learned that the DARPA Chief had been relocated. Meanwhile, Liquid Snake used the Hind D to engage and shoot down the two F-16s.

Encounter

Making his way deeper into the base, Snake located the prison cells where DARPA Chief Donald Anderson was being held. Anderson informed Snake that the terrorists indeed had the ability to launch a nuclear strike thanks to Metal Gear REX, the existence of which shocked Snake. Anderson also explained that the terrorists needed two detonation



codes to arm REX: one from himself, which the terrorists already had, and one from Kenneth Baker. Fortunately for Snake, there was a PAL system that he could use to deactivate REX, via three card keys. Before Snake could escort the DARPA Chief to safety, Anderson suffered a heart attack and fell dead. After reporting to Campbell, Snake became suspicious that he knew more than he was letting on, but was unable to learn more.

Hearing the commotion from the next cell, Meryl Silverburgh effected her own escape, tricking the guard on patrol and stealing his uniform. As Snake made his way outside, he ran into the disguised Meryl, who held him at

gunpoint. Following a tense showdown, they were soon ambushed by a squad of heavily armed Genome Soldiers, and the two joined forces to defeat them. After the coast was clear, Meryl ran into an elevator, shooting at Snake after falling under the influence of FOXHOUND's psychic, Psycho Mantis. Snake, using information given to him by Anderson, then headed to the lower levels to find President Baker. Upon spotting Baker tied to a pillar rigged with C4, Snake



feared he had arrived too late before being confronted by FOXHOUND member Revolver Ocelot. The two had a gun duel, before the intervention of the Cyborg Ninja who cut off Ocelot's hand, as well as cutting the wires holding Baker, the latter also recognizing the Ninja upon seeing it. The Ninja then vanished and Ocelot ran off, carrying his severed hand. Snake helped Baker, who mentioned that Meryl had the PAL override keys. He gave Snake a hint to where to find her Codec frequency. After he gave Snake the REX launch data, and telling him where to find Dr. Hal Emmerich, Baker revealed that he had been colluding with the DARPA Chief, Donald Anderson to secretly develop a new Metal Gear on the government's so-called black budget. For several years,

regular payments in the tens of thousands of dollars had been made to the cooperate account of a dummy company for which Anderson's wife ostensibly acted as a consultant. After supplying Snake with an optical disc containing all the information on the Metal Gear project remaining (as the hard drive was shot up during the revolt), Baker was then questioned about his knowledge on the Ninja. Baker then told him that the Ninja was 'FOXHOUND's dirty secret,' before imploring Snake to stop Metal Gear's launch, as his company would be finished if its development were leaked. Snake, surprised at his statement, asked Baker if Metal Gear used currently-existing technology. Baker confirmed that the Metal Gear unit itself carried currently existing technology, but was unable to elaborate more: Baker began to suffer from a heart attack, eerily similar to the way in which Anderson died. Baker then rambled on about how the Pentagon had double-crossed him, before eventually dying. Snake then contacted Meryl and she opened the hangar's cargo doors for him, allowing him to advance north and find Dr. Emmerich.



On his way there, Snake got a call from an anonymous tipster calling himself 'Deepthroat' saying that he was 'one of his fans.' He warned Snake of claymore mines that had been planted nearby and that an M1 tank was waiting for him up ahead. Sure enough, he was confronted by the tank, commanded by Vulcan Raven and crewed by two Genome Soldiers. Snake put the tank out of commission by throwing grenades into the hatch after distracting its electronic sensors with a chaff grenade.

Warhead Storage

Entering into Dr. Emmerich's office, the Cyborg Ninja appeared once again and confronted Snake. Confused as to how the Ninja seemed to remember him, and finding his fighting style familiar, Snake defeated the Ninja, before he vanished again. Snake realized the Ninja was Gray Fox, his old war buddy whom he had killed in Zanzibar Land.

Snake later revealed his discovery to Campbell, who was initially in disbelief until Naomi confirmed this as the truth. She explained that Gray Fox had been used for gene therapy experiments, led by FOXHOUND's former chief of medical staff Dr. Clark, who had died in a lab explosion two years prior. Campbell had been unaware of this, as it had happened shortly after his retirement from the unit;

Naomi only knew about it because she had stumbled upon it when she joined FOXHOUND. She added that Dr. Clark had recovered the body of a soldier after the fall of Zanzibar Land, and revived him. He had then been outfitted with a prototype exoskeleton, treated with drugs, and



experimented upon for four years, leading to the creation of the Genome Soldiers. Campbell was sickened by this, while Snake asked Naomi as to why she had failed to tell them sooner. She claimed that it was confidential information, but Snake suspected that there was more to it than she was letting on. When asked by Campbell as to what happened to Gray Fox afterwards, Naomi stated that he had died in the same lab explosion that killed Dr. Clark, at least according to reports. The Ninja's behavior led Snake to speculate that Gray Fox didn't even know his own identity, and that the only reason that he had lived on was for a fight to the death with Snake.

Rescuing Dr. Emmerich, who informed Snake he had developed Metal Gear REX, with no knowledge that it was to be nuclear-equipped. He believed that REX was intended

for provide Theater Missile Defense against nuclear weapons. Dr. Emmerich informed Snake that REX's armament was handled by a separate department (in order to keep him in the dark) and that REX's rail gun (based on the rail gun for the SDI) was miniaturized for REX by a joint venture between ArmsTech and Livermore National Labs. Livermore Labs also developed an experimental nuclear weapon for REX. Finally, Emmerich warned Snake that if the PAL override keys didn't work, he would have no choice but to destroy REX. Snake also briefly expressed some concern for Dr. Emmerich, due to his experience of Anderson and Baker dying from a heart attack shortly after telling him everything they knew.

Mantis's Hymn

Snake tracked down Meryl, but she only had one of the three detonation override keys on her. Heading to the REX hangar by way of the Communication Towers, Psycho Mantis took control of Meryl using his psychic powers. Snake had to knock Meryl out in order to save her. Snake proceeded to defeat Mantis who read both their minds, mentioning that he and Snake had a shared suffering, and predicting a great turmoil that awaited he and Meryl.

On their way to the towers, Sniper Wolf shot Meryl and used her as bait to lure Snake out. Devastated, Snake headed back to the armory to get a PSG1 in order to battle Wolf. Finding one, he immediately headed back and managed to out-snipe Wolf. Snake was then captured and tortured by Ocelot who took the launch data Baker gave to Snake. Snake resisted the torture, knowing that if he gave in, Ocelot would kill Meryl.

In the cell, Snake encountered Anderson's corpse, but mysteriously it appeared he had been dead for days. He received a call from Naomi and Campbell and Snake learned more about the situation and a heated conversation between Campbell and Snake ensued. Snake realized that Campbell had hid information from him and that he knew that REX was a nuclear delivery system. According to Campbell, even the U.S. President had



apparently been unaware of the existence of REX until the day before. To make matters more complicated, he was due to meet with the Russian President the following day for the formal signing of START III. If the fact that a new

nuclear weapon was being developed by the United States were made public, there was a significant chance that the signing would never take place. Worse still, the loss of confidence in America's commitment to non-proliferation could create international turmoil. The government clearly had every reason to keep the situation under wraps, and there were ample indication that the terrorists had counted on the fact. The timing of this takeover as well as the twenty-four hour deadline said as much. And Naomi told Snake that the reason that U.S. Government couldn't hand over Big Boss' corpse to the terrorists is because the President passed a number of policies that severely restrict genetic engineering on humans and he couldn't afford to have the public know about the military's use of genetically-enhanced soldiers.

Eventually Otacon, using his stealth camouflage, helped Snake by giving him rations and ketchup. Thinking on his feet, Snake used the ketchup as fake blood and Johnny Sasaki, who was guarding him, foolishly opened the cell door to check on him, and Snake immediately capitalized on this opportunity. Knocking Johnny out, Snake escaped from the cell, heading back to the Communication Towers.

Hind D

Once atop the first tower, he encountered Liquid who was piloting the Hind D, who proceeded to shoot the bridge connecting to the second tower. Using a rope he found, Snake rappelled down to the lower bridge connecting to second tower. He met Otacon who attempted to fix the elevator while Snake headed back out to fight against Liquid in the Hind D. Snake shot down the Hind with stinger missiles and headed out the tower. Along the way, Otacon mentioned that the elevator started operating again, and he didn't even fix it.

Snake boarded the elevator when Otacon called him again, realizing he forgot to tell Snake something he felt was important. There were five prototype stealth camouflage suits in his lab, counting his own. He was intending to get one for Snake, but when he went back to the lab, they were gone. He began to suspect that someone was 'holding' the elevator down. Snake, slowly realizing what had happened, asked Otacon if the weight limit warning went off while he was on it. Otacon confirmed this, also finding it strange as he was nowhere near being over the weight limit. Snake asked him his weight, Otacon replying that he's 135 pounds, and the elevator's maximum limit is 650 pounds. Snake concluded that about five people would be required to go over the limit. Otacon realizing what had happened, attempted to warn Snake that whoever stole the remaining stealth camouflage

prototypes were on the elevator with him. They then ambushed Snake at that moment, but Snake managed to defeat them.



Emerging onto the snowfield, he was caught off guard by Sniper Wolf but he defeated her in the end. She told him about growing up and being taken away from the battlefield by a man named Saladin, who Snake correctly assumed was Big Boss. Now at peace, she requested Snake to 'finish her quick.' At that moment, Otacon turned up, admitting that he had fallen in love with her. Snake then shot Wolf before him and Otacon parted ways. Otacon promised that he would help Snake anyway he could.

Colosseo

SNAKE then headed to the control room where REX was being held and in the process met Vulcan Raven for the second time. Raven, armed with a gatling gun battled Snake and was eventually defeated. Raven revealed to him that the man he met in the cells who told him about Metal Gear was in fact, Decoy Octopus in disguise. Snake was then told by Master Miller that Naomi was not who she was making herself out to be. Based on information she gave earlier about her past, Miller made the deduction that she was lying and was most likely a spy. Snake mentioned that she did used to work for FOXHOUND, and Campbell then asked if she was involved in the uprising. Miller then hinted that she may actually be part of a third party, before telling Campbell to arrest Naomi, as she had endangered the operation. Miller then told Campbell that she needed to be interrogated to find out her employers, with Campbell worrying that they would be in big trouble if she turned out to be a spy. Snake then asked Campbell what he meant by that, to which Campbell quickly denied any meaning. Miller then asked Campbell if he was hiding anything that dealt with the mysterious circumstances on the deaths of the DARPA Chief and the ArmsTech President. He then tried to reason with Miller to allow her to stay on the mission a little while longer, to which he accidentally let slip to Snake that he may have had some involvement in their deaths, with Snake remarking that he wouldn't give Campbell any more time.



REX's Lair

MAKING his way to the REX Hangar Control Room, Otacon contacted Snake and, after stating that he had overheard some guards talking about how REX's preparations were complete, revealed that he was in the computer room and thus could hack into President Baker's files to find the PAL key. He eventually contacted Snake after successfully hacking into Baker's computer files and stated that, although he hadn't found the PAL key file yet, he found out about what Metal Gear REX was capable of: Metal Gear REX was able to launch specifically-designed nuclear warheads with its rail gun, and in fact the missiles it launched were stealth missiles, due to not requiring any fuel as well as being imbued with stealth technology and a surface-piercing warhead, thus making it more apparent why the Sons of Big Boss would choose the START III signing date as their deadline: its development being exposed would, in the worse case scenario, result in the UN denouncing the United States and possibly even result in the President being brought down.

Otacon also revealed that it was only simulated and thus never actually tested, explaining the exercise, and Otacon's analysis indicated that it accomplished more than they had hoped for, although he couldn't find the test data to back it up, with Snake grimly admitting that Baker gave him the test data,

and that Ocelot took it from him during the torture. Otacon later contacted him telling him about the reason behind Baker's motives: ArmsTech was in a worse financial state than even Otacon thought, as there were rumors about a hostile takeover against ArmsTech after their X Plane project was scrapped by the military in addition to the funding cut caused by SDI, and that REX was their last chance at the company's survival, with Baker bribing the DARPA Chief to work on it. Snake overheard Liquid and Ocelot talking about their plans: instead of taking the superpowers head on (such as by launching a nuke against the United States or Russia), they would provoke the superpowers into fighting against each other, which would possibly result in mutual assured destruction. This was the reason why he went against Ocelot's suggestion to set the target for the nuclear strike to be Chernoton, Russia; preferring instead Lop Nor, China, the location of a nuclear test site. Firing a nuke on civilian territory would spell the end for any possible future negotiations, but an attack on a nuclear test site could still be concealed from the public by the Chinese



government. This way, he could pit the Chinese (and also India, due to the CNTBT) against the U.S., and the latter would be forced to confess to some of its state secrets. At that point, he figured the other superpowers in the world would be interested in buying the system from them (Metal Gear REX and possibly improved Genome Soldiers), at which point he would sell them to the highest bidder.

They also mention that they have included more demands for the White House: one billion dollars, which, along with Big Boss's DNA, would be used to cure the Genome Soldiers from a mysterious genetic illness, and the FOXDIE vaccine. Not only that, but with Metal Gear REX in his possession, Liquid planned to join his forces (FOXHOUND and the Genome Army) with Sergei Gurlukovich's forces and turn Shadow Moses into Outer Heaven. With these vast resources at his command, Liquid would drag the world into the Third World War, wanting to fulfill Big Boss's dream of a world which always had a place for soldiers. Otacon contacted Snake, telling Snake he finally found the PAL key file and discovered that the trick to the PAL key was that it was made of a shape memory alloy that changed at different temperatures: room temperature, low temperature and high temperature.

Enclosure

Just then, Snake was discovered by Ocelot. Snake lost track of the PAL key after Ocelot shot it out of his hand. Snake was able to find the PAL key in the drainage ditch before being poisoned from the radiation. After having been taken into custody by Campbell, Naomi called Snake and told him that she was, in fact, a spy. She then went on to tell Snake why she did what she did, revealing that her brother was Frank Jaeger (better known as Gray Fox), which shocked Snake. He had adopted her in Rhodesia after her parents were killed. She had simply bought her identity of Naomi Hunter, and didn't even know her real name. It was after the Rhodesian Civil War that Big Boss had brought Frank and Naomi over to America, just before Big Boss and Frank went off again, to fight in the Mercenary War where Frank was nearly killed by Snake. Filled with pure hatred for Snake, Naomi joined FOXHOUND and waited for her time. She revealed to Snake that he had been injected with FOXDIE, an artificial virus that targeted specific people and caused the victim to suffer a heart attack. He had been injected with it so it could be used to kill off FOXHOUND and Baker, but Naomi had re-engineered the virus so that it would kill him too. However, she admitted that she no longer hated him, after learning his point of view on the fight with Gray Fox. She also told him that while she did hate him for crippling her brother (and thus indirectly putting him in gene therapy as a guinea pig), her hatred wasn't the primary reason why she injected him. Just before she could reveal

the truth, Campbell wrestled her down and told Snake that he was forbidden to talk to her, but Snake was deeply upset at Campbell due to him being 'betrayed and used.'

Eventually, Snake inputted all the three PAL keys, only to discover that he had inadvertently activated Metal Gear REX himself. Confused by how this could have happened, Snake was soon contacted by Miller. He revealed to Snake that Anderson's and Baker's detonation codes had never been used as the terrorists had been unable to obtain the former's before his death. He also revealed that Octopus



had posed as Anderson to trick Snake into locating the PAL keys, but FOXHOUND hadn't anticipated that Snake would be a carrier for FOXDIE. Just then, Campbell called Snake and told him that the person he was talking to wasn't Miller. He told him that the real Miller had been dead for three days which shocked Snake. In addition, although Campbell initially didn't know about Miller's death due to Miller's Codec being cut off from Campbell, Mei Ling had traced 'Miller's' frequency from being within Shadow Moses. After the truth came out, Miller revealed that he

was actually Liquid in disguise. Liquid trapped Snake in the control room and activated the soman gas valves, but Snake was able to easily escape after calling Otacon for help. After escaping, Snake finally confronted Liquid, face-to-face, and Liquid explained that he disguised himself as Miller in order to trick Snake more easily, and also revealed how the people who were using him as a disease vector were the people who recruited him: the Pentagon. Naomi was working with the Pentagon on making the virus program, although they did not anticipate that she would modify FOXDIE to target Snake out of revenge. He also explained that the reason the Pentagon decided to inject Snake with FOXDIE was so they could recover the Genome Soldier bodies as well as the Metal Gear REX weapon undamaged.

After explaining this to Snake, as well as briefly stating that he and Snake were not ordinary twins, but twins that were clones of Big Boss as a result of the Les Enfants Terribles project, as well as expressing his hatred for both Snake for receiving the dominant genes (making Snake 'the dominant one'), and their father, Big Boss for apparently choosing Liquid knowingly to be the inferior one. Liquid told Snake that he wanted to kill Big Boss and exact revenge, berating his brother for 'stealing that chance', as well as saying that by following Big Boss's legacy, he would 'surpass and destroy [Big Boss].'

Duel

Liquid then climbed aboard REX, giving Snake no option but to destroy it. In addition, he also learned from Roy Campbell that if Snake failed to destroy REX, Campbell will be forced to resort to using the USS Discovery to bombard the Shadow Moses facility with nuclear warheads as a last resort. Otacon then called Snake and told him REX's weakness: REX's radome was Liquid's only view of the outside world while he was piloting it under the high-indestructible hull of the Metal Gear, meaning that he needed to destroy the radome to force Liquid to open up the cockpit and thus expose himself to enemy fire. Despite his valiant effort, it seemed like Snake was getting nowhere against REX. At that point, Gray Fox jumped out from the shadows and damaged REX's radome, which temporarily blinded Liquid. Fox and Snake used this opportunity to hide, which allowed Fox to explain to Snake that he adopted Naomi because he killed her parents, and felt guilty because of it. Fox then attempted to take out REX, but was eventually crushed under by it, although not



before completely destroying REX's radome which forced Liquid to open up the cockpit and expose himself. With Liquid now being forced to leave REX's cockpit open and expose himself, Snake shot REX several times with the stinger before REX exploded, knocking Snake unconscious.

Ssnake, hands bound, awoke atop the destroyed REX with Liquid watching over him, the latter having survived REX's destruction. Liquid proceeded to explain his plans to Snake, of creating a war-torn world in which warriors such as the two of them would always have a place, similar to Big Boss's dream. He also accused Snake himself of longing for such a world, despite his protests, citing his actions on Shadow Moses. Liquid went on to reveal the existence of 'Les Enfants Terribles' to Snake, a project in which the two of them were created: they were both clones of Big Boss, with Liquid Snake having supposedly inherited Big Boss's 'inferior' recessive traits, while Solid Snake inherited his 'superior' dominant traits. The Genome Soldiers were also products of Big Boss's genes, though their gene therapy had resulted in the appearance of a certain genetic disease, for which they needed Big Boss's DNA to cure them. Liquid then revealed his belief that he was obeying the 'will' of his genes, so that eventually he would surpass Big Boss and his own heritage, and that he would kill Snake in order to do so.

Liquid then directed Snake's attention behind him, to the prone body of Meryl, whom he had also placed atop REX. Although Liquid was unsure as to whether she was

still alive, he told Snake that he would release her as soon as they both finished their business. Informing Snake that they were just about 'out of time,' Liquid relayed intel that the Pentagon had likely learned of Naomi's betrayal and REX's destruction, and were about to destroy the Shadow Moses facility. Apparently, Naomi's manipulation of the FOXDIE virus (casting grave doubts on the reliability of FOXDIE itself) and the destruction of REX (thus ending



the nuclear threat) had put the Pentagon on alert. This was shortly confirmed by Campbell, who explained that a nuclear strike (from a payload of surface-piercing B61-13 tactical nuclear missiles) was on its way, though he intended to delay the launch in order to buy Snake and Meryl some time to escape. Campbell revealed that the Pentagon had deliberately and knowingly assigned her to Shadow Moses on the same day that FOXHOUND would rebel, in order to blackmail him and that he was forced to hide vital information from Snake in order to ensure Meryl's safety. He apologized to Snake, saying that it was the least he could do for lying to him throughout the mission.

However, before he could give any orders, in order to confuse the chain of command, Campbell was arrested by Jim Houseman, the Secretary of Defense. Houseman personally took over as the mission's commander and headed for Shadow Moses on an E-3C AWACS. Houseman assured Snake that the facility would be destroyed, along with him and his brother, both of whom he considered to be an embarrassment from the 1970s. When Snake accused him of setting up Donald Anderson and the other hostages, he expressed sorrow that Anderson had died, due to the fact Anderson was a friend of his. Houseman then offered to stop the bombing if Snake provided him with the REX battle data. Since Ocelot had stolen it during the torture session, Snake couldn't meet that demand.

After Houseman signed off, Liquid demanded that the two fight. A gruelling bare-handed fight then ensued between the 'Twin Snakes,' with Solid Snake eventually forcing Liquid over the side of REX's head, to a long fall to the ground below. Snake immediately ran to check on Meryl who was fine. Otacon called and Snake demanded that he leave as soon as possible, warning him about the F-117 Nighthawk and B-2 Spirit stealth bombers that were on their way to nuke the base, but Otacon refused. He told Snake that he would rather stay where he was and help him and Meryl to escape, using his hacking talents to open any doors and passages for them.

Escape

Snake and Meryl escaped through the adjacent supply route and commandeered a jeep nearby. With Meryl driving, and Snake manning the rear machine gun, they broke through several barricades along the supply tunnel, eliminating the Genome Soldiers they encountered along the way. Shortly thereafter, Liquid, having survived his previous fall, appeared in another jeep, pursuing them whilst opening fire with a FAMAS assault rifle. Snake and Liquid exchanged fire, until the two jeeps reached the end of the tunnel, and crashed into one another in the confusion of the chase. Snake and Meryl were trapped under their overturned jeep, as Liquid slowly approached. However, before he could shoot Snake he began to suffer from a heart attack, as a result of FOXDIE. Snake, now convinced that he too would die, remained solemn.



He then noticed that the stealth bombers weren't present, despite the fact that they should have arrived by then. Snake then received a call from Colonel Campbell who informed him that Jim Houseman had been arrested, since

he had managed to contact the President and inform him of what had happened: Apparently, Houseman was acting alone with the entire event. He also revealed that the air strike orders had been rescinded and the six F-117s and B-2 bombers had returned to base, since Washington, D.C. was apparently not stupid enough to use nukes to cover up secrets (although Snake had some doubts about that). After learning that Meryl was alright, he again apologized to Snake for his behavior during the operation, though he also informed them that they were both now 'officially dead,' because their jeep 'had crashed into the ocean.' Snake requested a rescue for Otacon, and asked if he could speak to Naomi, who told Snake not to worry about FOXDIE and live his life as he would. Not afraid, Snake and Meryl rode off together into the Alaskan wilderness.

After the incident, the only surviving member of FOXHOUND, Revolver Ocelot, reported the events to the President of the United States, since he had actually been working as a double agent in order to recover REX's data. He revealed that he had purposefully killed the DARPA Chief because he knew of Ocelot's true identity and motives. He also reported that the 'inferior' twin, Solid Snake had defeated his brother Liquid, the latter of whom died believing himself to be the inferior one. Ocelot then complimented the President on being a 'well balanced individual', worthy of ruling the world, as the perfect clone of Big Boss: Solidus Snake. He also, after inquiring the status of an unidentified female, was told to keep surveillance on her.

Aftermath

The U.S. Government denied any involvement in the Shadow Moses Incident and subsequently issued a cover story, which claimed that the revolt was the work of a radical right-wing group. According to this account, the incident was speedily resolved by the successful deployment of a commando unit, after rejecting the group's demands for the release of fellow members incarcerated in federal penitentiaries.

As a consequence of sabotaging Snake's mission to Shadow Moses, Naomi Hunter was placed into a high-security federal prison. However, three days after the incident, Naomi managed to escape under mysterious circumstances. Nastasha Romanenko, doing her own independent research on the aftermath of the incident while preparing to expose the incident with the book *In the Darkness of Shadow Moses: The Unofficial Truth*, had discovered this and implied suspicion that it was Solid Snake who was responsible for engineering her escape, which resulted in Snake's rap sheet being modified to include this. In addition, the surviving Genome Soldiers (sans Johnny Sasaki) were reassigned to Pease AFB, officially for more training, although Romanenko suspected that they were actually imprisoned there to continue experimentation.

Because Metal Gear REX's rail gun had undergone technical problems that required immediate attention prior to the terrorist takeover (hence why Baker entrusted the optical disc containing the REX data to Snake, and why Houseman had wanted the data badly), and the loss of the data to Ocelot, the REX project was cancelled. However, REX's data was later leaked worldwide by Ocelot, who had disappeared after the incident.

Richard Ames was promoted to Colonel as a result of the mission, although the DIA, when Romanenko, Ames' ex-wife, called his office for his whereabouts, claimed that he never existed.

Campbell resumed retirement, although Meryl would eventually end up returning to the service due to her father's connections.

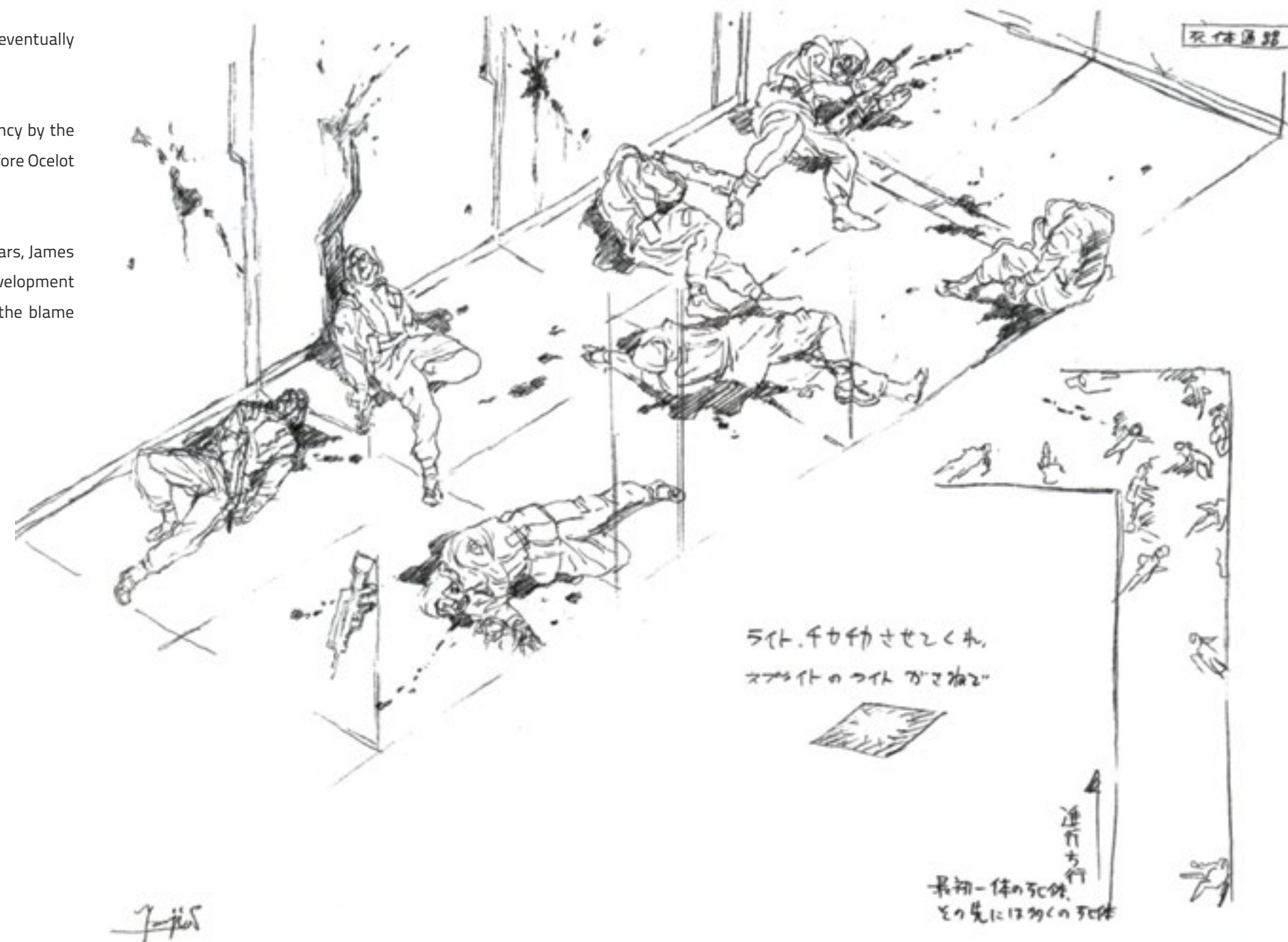
Houseman's actions later resulted in his death supposedly by a self-inflicted gunshot, although Romanenko suspected due to witnessing his final actions late into the mission that the Patriots had arranged his death as he refused to 'take the fall.'

Otacon resigned from ArmsTech and decided to visit relatives at England. He later formed Philanthropy with Solid Snake to take down the Metal Gear REX derivatives. Because the mission did not ultimately follow the Patriots' designs, the S3 Plan was developed

specifically to resemble the mission, which eventually came to pass four years after the incident.

George Sears was removed from the presidency by the Patriots, alongside nearly being killed by them before Ocelot intervened.

The Patriots fed the President succeeding Sears, James Johnson, a cover story that claimed that the development of REX was unsanctioned by them, and placed the blame squarely on Anderson's shoulders



Metal Gear Solid: Mobile

Developer	Kojima Productions
Publisher	Konami
Platform	N-Gage, mobile phone
Release date	March 19, 2008



This game is a **non-canonical** entry in the Metal Gear series



The story takes place between Metal Gear Solid and Metal Gear Solid 2, and follows the early days of Philanthropy. Ocelot has leaked all the technical information for Metal Gear REX onto the black market. As a counter-measure, Solid Snake and Otacon form Philanthropy. It isn't long until Otacon receives his first lead on development of a new Metal Gear.

2006 Mobile Operations

Victoria Reed, an AI (artificial intelligence) programmer, learns that the technology she has been developing will be used in a fearsome weapon of destruction. She becomes a whistle-blower and attempts to escape from the facility. She places her trust in Otacon, and now Snake has been dispatched on a solo mission to infiltrate the facility and rescue the scientist.

Upon reaching the facility, it becomes evident that the military holding the plans for the new Metal Gear REX is non-aggressive. Despite this, Snake infiltrates the facility and eventually reaches the basement, where he is captured in a cell. Snake is contacted via Codec frequency 116.66 by the terrorist leader, named simply Commander. It is revealed that Victoria was an AI program herself (Victoria's initials are VR), created by the terrorists to lure Snake into the facility and deactivate their security system, allowing the terrorists to essentially walk right in and commandeer the REX stored in the basement. Snake escapes his cell and makes his way to the REX, avoiding the Semtex charges now lining most of the base and machinegun mounted sentries along the way.

En route to the basement, Snake uses C4 to open a cracked wall and when he walks through the newly formed hole, the room flashes green and blue and becomes

blurry and artificial. Strange codec calls come in from not only Otacon, but also Commander, breaking the fourth wall and urging the player to turn off their cell phone. The real Otacon then contacts Snake, alerting him that he has been drugged, kidnapped and placed into a virtual reality simulation, and he is in the process of hacking the simulation to save Snake. He says that he's been trying to reveal the identity of the group that kidnapped him, but has been unable to do so, however, due to the technology used in the VR simulation. He comments that judging by the complexity of the program, the programmers must have near unlimited resources, hinting at the group being the Patriots. He then remarks that since Snake is so far into the simulation, it may be easier to just complete the objective and destroy the fictional Metal Gear than to even bother hacking him out. Snake agrees, encounters Commander on top of a VR Metal Gear REX, and easily dispatches him using a combination of the FAMAS and Nikita rocket launcher.

Snake then wakes up to unnamed voices speaking. They say that while Snake did prove useful, he failed to provide them with the battle data they needed for the project, and they instruct someone to erase all memories of the simulation and dump him back where they kidnapped him. One unnamed voice then says that they already have the second test subject lined up. One of the voices then says, '... Let's see if Jack can do better.'



Metal Gear Solid 2: Sons of Liberty

Developer	Konami Computer Entertainment Japan
Publisher	Konami
Director	Hideo Kojima
Producer	Hideo Kojima
Designer	Hideo Kojima
Artist	Yoji Shinkawa
Writer	Hideo Kojima Tomokazu Fukushima
Composer	Harry Gregson-Williams Norihiro Hibino
Platform	PlayStation 2
Release date	November 12, 2001



Two years after the events of Shadow Moses Incident, Solid Snake and Otacon, working as Philanthropy, receive intelligence of a new type of Metal Gear being transported through the Hudson River. As Snake boards the tanker, it's seized by a group of Russian mercenaries led by Revolver Ocelot, intent on stealing the new Metal Gear.

2007 Tanker Incident

The Manhattan Tanker Incident, more commonly known and referred to simply as the Tanker Incident, was the armed takeover and subsequent sinking of the tanker USS Discovery on August 8, 2007. The event was staged by the Patriots in order to retrieve the United States Marines' prototype Metal Gear RAY, and frame renowned mercenary Solid Snake as the terrorist responsible.

Opening Infiltration

Around mid 2007, the anti-Metal Gear NGO, Philanthropy, received intelligence that a new type of Metal Gear, codenamed RAY, was to be transported through the New York Harbor aboard a disguised oil tanker, the USS Discovery. The information had been provided by Em-



ma Emmerich, the stepsister of Philanthropy member Hal Emmerich. The Metal Gear had been developed by the Marines and was designed as an amphibious Anti-Metal Gear unit. During its scheduled voyage along the Hudson River, a stealth camouflaged Solid Snake boarded the Discovery from the George Washington Bridge, via bungee jump. The stealth camo was damaged from the landing impact, forcing Snake to take cover on the ship's deck. Snake's objective was to take photographs of the new Metal Gear and verify its existence, which Philanthropy would then expose to the public.

Russian Soldiers from Kasatka

After reviewing his equipment, Snake proceeded with his task, although he had a bad feeling about how the mission was going to turn out. Otacon told him that they would rendezvous at the Verrazano Bridge. However, before he could get far, Snake witnessed the hostile takeover of the tanker by Russian mercenaries led by an unknown man. Taking the Marines by complete surprise, the mercenaries silently killed all personnel on board the ship's deck. Snake photographed their leader and relayed the image to Otacon for identification. Undeterred, Snake proceeded towards the bridge to determine where the ship was headed...



Olga Gurlukovich

Avoiding the mercenaries, Snake headed up to the bridge where he found information on the ship's heading: 35° longitude, 58° latitude. Otacon realized that they were heading over 500 miles past the Bermudas, and deduced that this meant that RAY was ready for solo testing, and already combat worthy. As the testing area was also well outside of the United States



Second Fleet's operation range as well, Otacon also concluded that this not only meant that it was a standalone Marine Corps project, but also able to operate independently without any Naval assistance. Before Snake could go down to the cargo hold to identify RAY, he heard a crash and went to investigate. There, Snake encountered the leader's daughter, Olga Gurlukovich, who has refused to leave the tanker despite being pregnant. After an intense gun battle on the bridge, he successfully tranquilized her in combat. Shortly afterwards, a U.S. Army Cypher UAV took Snake by surprise and photographed him.

Metal Gear?

Otacon then reported that he had discovered the identity of the mercenary leader: Sergei Gurlukovich. Otacon also told Snake that the reason that he knew of the existence of Metal Gear RAY was from a tip from Emma Emmerich, his stepsister. Snake made it down to the hold and engaged in a gun fight with Gurlukovich soldiers along the way. After Snake arrived to the hold where Marine Commandant Scott Dolph was giving his speech to the Marines, Otacon revealed that someone was monitoring their transmission. Wary of this development, Otacon arranged for an alternative method of sending the required photos of RAY back to him (instead of using the Codec): specifically a small computer terminal in the main hold where RAY was being held.



Revolver Ocelot

Afterwards, Snake took the photos of RAY and transferred them without issue. As the Marine Commandant finished his speech (the Marines 'listening' unaware of the currently ensuing takeover), to Snake's shock, an appearance was made by Revolver Ocelot, who revealed himself to be working with Sergei Gurlukovich, with the latter holding Dolph at gun point. Sergei explained that he planned to sell RAY to Russia in order to revive Russia



to its former glory. But Ocelot revealed that he had different plans for RAY, and Sergei assumed that he was still taking orders from Solid Snake. But Ocelot revealed his true allegiance with 'the Patriots.' Dolph, upon learning this, was shocked that the Patriots apparently were involved with RAY (while referring to them as 'the La-Li-Lu-Le-Lo') With Snake looking on, Ocelot betrayed Sergei and shot him, along with Dolph and four Gurlukovich members who attempted to avenge their fallen leader. Ocelot then blew up the tanker using the planted SEMTEX, but not before hijacking the new Metal Gear unit.

Suddenly, Ocelot's right arm began to spasm. In that moment, he started to talk like Liquid Snake, taunting his brother. It is revealed that Ocelot received a new arm after the Shadow Moses Incident, that of the late Liquid Snake, which caused a change in Revolver Ocelot's demeanor and behavior, with Liquid somehow possessing him. 'Liquid' told Snake that he was 'drowning in time' (referring to the accelerated aging process), and that Liquid avoided this fate by living on through the transplanted arm.



Under Liquid's control, Ocelot escaped in RAY, tearing apart the sinking tanker in the process with its hydro cannon. The tanker's sinking resulted in the deaths of more than half of the soldiers on board, as well as the apparent death of Solid Snake (in actuality, Snake had survived, having faked his death by leaving behind the corpse of Liquid Snake as a decoy). RAY's theft had actually been orchestrated by the Patriots, and Philanthropy was later framed for causing the incident, becoming labeled as eco-terrorists. It was largely thanks to this cover story that Fortune and Vamp of Dead Cell and Olga Gurlukovich would later want revenge against Solid Snake. Although Philanthropy was ultimately discredited as a result of the incident, they nonetheless succeeded in convincing at least one website about the development of RAY.

Manipulated by the Patriots, the media reported that Solid Snake had led the terrorist takeover of the oil tanker. Fearing an environmental disaster, the Navy had dispatched the Marines to defuse the threat, but Snake had ended up sinking the tanker and killing everyone involved, including himself. The major cleanup that would be required gave the Patriots the perfect cover for the construction of Arsenal Gear.

2009 Big Shell Incident

Two years after the sinking of the tanker USS Discovery, with Solid Snake blamed and confirmed dead as a result, new FOXHOUND recruit Snake, (changed to Raiden during the mission) was sent to infiltrate the off-shore decontamination facility known as the Big Shell, which was constructed shortly after the sinking of the tanker, which, according the government, spilled thousands of gallons of crude oil into the New York Harbor. This would later be known as the Big Shell Incident, and more commonly, the Manhattan Incident.



Big Shell

On April 29, 2009, a terrorist group calling themselves the Sons of Liberty seized control of the Big Shell during a routine inspection tour. The group consisted of former special forces unit Dead Cell and Russian private army members, who were apparently being led by Solid Snake himself. The terrorists took nearly 30 people hostage, one of whom was the 44th U.S. President James Johnson, who had been on an inspection tour at the time. The Sons of



Liberty's demands were \$30 billion, and they claimed that if their demands were not met, they would destroy the Big Shell. Not only would this ignite the crude oil in the Manhattan Harbor, but could also burn the chlorides used during the cleanup, creating high levels of dioxins that would wipe out the bay's ecosystem and become the worst environmental disaster in history.

Initially referred to as 'Snake,' Raiden had orders to rescue the U.S. President and the other hostages from the Sons of Liberty. Raiden infiltrated the Big Shell by sea while SEAL Team 10 entered by air. SEAL Team 10 was divided into 2 groups: Alpha Team landed at Strut B with orders to rescue the President, and Bravo Team was to assist bomb disposal expert Peter Stillman on Strut C, in order to neutralize any explosives planted within the facility.

As Raiden commenced his underwater infiltration from the Hudson River, he discovered a recently cut hole in the Big Shell's oil fence. After successfully entering the deep sea dock of Strut A, Shell 1, he radioed his commanding officer, the Colonel, about a possible intruder other than himself. The Colonel was taken by surprise, since Raiden should have been the only one to take that infiltration route. Regardless, he ordered Raiden to proceed with caution, after explaining some of the basics of his equipped Skull Suit. Raiden was preparing to exit the immediate area, when he heard sounds of a scuffle emanating from behind a hatch. Opening the hatch, Raiden noticed a peculiar sight in the proceeding hallway: a guard was picking himself up from the floor, having apparently regained consciousness, before heading off in the opposite direction. Following the guard's path into the next room, Raiden witnessed another sentry being catapulted out of the nearby elevator, knocking him unconscious, before coming across the prone body of the previous guard from the hallway. During the ordeal, Raiden managed to catch a brief glimpse of the

person responsible, behind the closing elevator doors, thus confirming that there was indeed an intruder other than himself aboard the Big Shell.



The Colonel directed Raiden towards a computer node, which would allow him to access the Big Shell's facilities network. The Colonel then revealed to Raiden that he had selected the 'perfect' systems analyst for the mission: his girlfriend Rosemary. Though Raiden was initially unhappy about this development, he reluctantly agreed to her partaking in the mission, but only under the condition that she didn't participate in any way other than as an analyst. Rose also stated to the Colonel that because of this, she would not follow any orders unless it directly related to her immediate duties. Raiden then accessed the node, his nanomachines bypassing the security clearance, and pulled up the structural map of the dock, allowing him to activate his Soliton Radar. With the guards regaining consciousness, Raiden quickly called the elevator, and was forced to hide until it arrived, before boarding it cautiously to avoid enemy detection. Making his way to the rooftop, Raiden removed the rest of his diving gear

Vamp

Raiden took extreme care in regards to sneaking around the first struts, with intel provided by the Colonel that the President was on Strut B, along with SEAL Team 10, Alpha Team. After reaching the A-B connecting bridge, Raiden received a transmission from Alpha leader, which had been intercepted by the Colonel: apparently, Alpha Team had located the President, but before they could leave with him, a mysterious entity attacked them, abruptly cutting off the transmission.



Upon entering the transformer room in Strut B, Raiden discovered the many slaughtered bodies of Alpha Team filling the hallway, and with the President nowhere in sight. The one responsible was Vamp, a mysterious vampire-like member of Dead Cell who ambushed and slaughtered virtually the entire team. Vamp would have also killed Raiden, had it not been for the rescue efforts of the single SEAL Team 10 survivor, Iroquois Pliskin. Pliskin explained the origins of Vamp and Dead Cell and provided Raiden with a SOCOM pistol. He also

identified Raiden as a member of FOXHOUND, even though Pliskin explained that the unit was disbanded 4 years ago. Afterwards, Raiden headed onwards with his mission.



Fortune

As Raiden made it to the B-C connecting bridge, he encountered Bravo Team, who had managed to surround Dead Cell leader Fortune, with the President in her grasp. Firing their weapons, the SEALs were unable to hit her, as every bullet veered away from her, and grenades failed to detonate, as though she were gifted with a supernatural luck. Seeing the hopelessness of their situation, and having been ordered to conceal his presence, Raiden chose not to intervene. Fortune then proceeded to kill all the members of Bravo Team with her powerful man-portable rail gun, destroying the bridge leading to the Shell 1 Core, into which she and Vamp took the President and the 'football.'

Receiving a Codec call from the Colonel, Raiden was informed that both SEALs helicopters were shot down by a Harrier and that the SEALs assault was just a diversion to cover Raiden's infiltration. The Colonel also told Raiden that they had received intelligence regarding the presence of C4 explosives, which had been planted throughout the Big Shell facility. With the new objective of helping to disarm these explosives, Raiden



rendezvoused with bomb disposal expert Peter Stillman and, once again, Lieutenant JG Pliskin, in Strut C. Stillman explained to them that Dead Cell member Fatman was one of his students (in fact, his best student). He also informed them that an engineer, Big Shell's security systems architect, entered Big Shell with him to get SEAL Team 10 through all of the plant's security measures. After agreeing that Stillman would be safer hiding where he was, Raiden and Pliskin headed out to disarm the C4 planted within Shells 1 and 2, respectively, by Fatman.

However, when all the bombs were disarmed, Raiden received some shocking and disappointing news from a now mobile Stillman. It seemed that all of the 'baby' C4s (which had been planted in places where serious damage could not be done to the Big Shell) were simply diversions for the real bombs, which were hidden in the lower levels of Strut A and H. The two were large enough to disturb the structure's integrity and destroy the entirety of the Big Shell if they both detonated. It also turned out that the real bombs were programmed to activate after all of the baby C4s were disarmed. Although Raiden was able to disarm the Strut A bomb, after returning to the deep sea dock, the Strut H bomb detonated, killing Stillman. Pliskin was able to survive unscathed.



As Raiden prepared to leave Strut A, he was confronted by Fortune, who was surprised since she had been expecting to find somebody else. Nevertheless, she remarked that he may still be able to 'bring her death.' Fortune attacked Raiden, devastating the surrounding area in the process with her rail gun. Raiden, unable to hit her, could only evade her attacks. Raiden was soon contacted

by Campbell, to relay a demand made by Fatman: Raiden must head to the heliport on Strut E, otherwise another bomb would be detonated there, destroying the entire facility. Shortly thereafter, Vamp arrived in the area to inform Fortune of Fatman's apparent betrayal. Raiden, taking advantage of the distraction, took another shot at Fortune, though the bullets were deflected away from her, and hit Vamp in the forehead and lower chest. While Fortune cradled Vamp in her arms, lamenting that she herself could not follow him in death, Raiden made his escape. However, moments later, Vamp awakened, having shrugged off the seemingly fatal attack.



Countdown to Disaster

With the bomb's countdown having already begun, Raiden headed to the heliport, and neutralized the explosive. He was then confronted by Fatman himself, who professed his disinterest in Dead Cell's and the Sons of Liberty's goals. Fatman was also suspiciously unaware of the existence of the ransom demands for \$30 billion. His only wish was to surpass his former mentor, Peter Stillman, and become the most famous bomber in history,



by destroying the entire Big Shell. Challenging Raiden to stop him, he proceeded to place multiple explosives in the area, utilizing his quick speed. Raiden was forced to neutralize each bomb in turn, with coolant spray, while fighting Fatman at the same time. Raiden's perseverance eventually paid off, with Fatman collapsing from his injuries. Informing him that he had yet to disarm the 'biggest bomb in the place,' Fatman passed away. Raiden, however, discovered this last bomb, which had been hidden beneath his body.

The bomb threat now over, the Colonel informed him that the hostages, including the President, were still in danger. Afterwards, Pliskin told Raiden that the only way to rescue the hostages was to extract them via chopper. Raiden proceeded to leave the heliport in order to locate the President when he was confronted by the Cyborg Ninja; an exoskeleton-encased soldier, brandishing a sword.



The Ninja told him that a Secret Service agent named Richard Ames, knew the location of the President, but was being held hostage in the Shell 1 Core. The mysterious informant then provided Raiden with an enemy uniform, which he could use to infiltrate the area. However, the Ninja also warned Raiden that he had three obstacles upon entering the Shell 1 Core: First, the elevator was guarded by a pressure-activated surveillance camera, necessitating the use of the B.D.U. to gain clearance to use the elevator. Second, Ames could only be identified by a unique heartbeat due to his possessing a pacemaker, necessitating a remote sound amplifier to locate him while at the same time not drawing too much suspicion. Third, the door leading to the room the hostages were located at was wired with a

biometrics scanning system, necessitating that Raiden force one of the guards to be scanned to open the door.

The Ninja also revealed to Raiden that the terrorists had access to a nuke which could be activated, since the nuclear football that could activate the nuke was brought to the Big Shell by a Navy Captain. The Ninja told him that the nuke wasn't brought by the terrorist themselves, but that it was already in the Big Shell to begin with since the Big Shell wasn't really a decontamination plant. In reality, Big Shell was housing a new Metal Gear. The Ninja then left, although not before supplying Raiden with a cell phone for future texts.

Metal Gear's Already Active !

Once Raiden located Ames in the Shell 1 Core, Ames told him that both of them were working for the same people. He then told him the President's location in the Shell 2 Core, that the tanker accident and oil spill two years ago were planned, and that the Big Shell was built specifically for the development of the Metal Gear. Ames explained that he must be helping the terrorists under his own free will, as his vital signs acted as a biometric password needed to activate the nuke (and the new Metal Gear). Raiden and Ames then cut their conversation short when Ocelot and

what seemed to be Solid Snake appeared. Raiden used the directional microphone to eavesdrop on them, learning that they planned on establishing 'Outer Heaven.' When Raiden mentioned the \$30 billion ransom, Ames told him that there was no threat or ransom. According to Ames, the terrorist's intention all along was the high-altitude detonation of the nuke over Manhattan, which would cause an EMP pulse, thus 'liberating' it. Revolver Ocelot spoke to Ames, revealing that Ames was sent there to keep tabs on the President, suspecting that he might betray 'them.' Before Ames could give any more information, he suddenly suffered a heart attack.



Before Raiden could be captured by Ocelot's forces, the Cyborg Ninja rescued him, permitting Raiden to escape. Raiden then headed to President Johnson's location, but on his way there, he was confronted by the terrorist leader, proclaiming himself to be Solid Snake. Enraged by this, Pliskin revealed himself to be the real Solid Snake and fired on the imposter from a Kasatka helicopter. Utilizing an advanced exoskeleton, the terrorist leader evaded Snake's attack and boarded a Harrier, being piloted by Vamp. Snake

then told Raiden to shoot it down, throwing a Stinger missile system down to him. Successfully doing so, the Harrier plummeted, only to be caught by Metal Gear RAY, which had been hijacked from the U.S. Marines two years earlier. RAY proceeded to launch missiles into the air, destroying sections of the Big Shell, and damaging the Kasatka, forcing it to land. RAY then departed into the ocean, taking the Harrier with it.



After recovering from RAY's attack, Solid Snake contacted Raiden by Codec, informing him of the situation, and introducing him to his partner, the Kasatka's pilot, Otacon. Otacon had rescued Snake from the sinking tanker two years earlier, and Snake had faked his own death using the body of Liquid Snake in place of his own. They revealed to Raiden that they were there to stop the terrorists from using the new Metal Gear prototype, continuing their work for the Anti-Metal Gear NGO Philanthropy. They also told Raiden that Otacon has another reason for being in the Big Shell: to rescue his sister, Emma Emmerich.

Having been convinced that the 'nuclear button' had been successfully accessed, due to RAY's sudden appearance, Raiden immediately headed towards the Shell 2 Core to rescue President Johnson. The damage to the Shell 1-2 connecting bridge forced Raiden to hang-grip all the way over to Shell 2, via a dislodged support beam, as well as avoiding the Gurlukovich soldiers on the next strut, who had arrived to investigate the area. After entering the Shell 2 Core, Raiden listened in on a radio conversation between Olga Gurlukovich, and the terrorist leader. Olga stated that she had unfinished business with Solid Snake, and that after the whole mess, she and her men were to leave for Russia and live for themselves. Olga then activated an electrified walkway, leading to the room in which the President was imprisoned, to prevent him from trying to escape. Unable to reach the President, Raiden went into the flooded lower floors of the Shell to locate a Nikita remote-controlled missile launcher, and successfully managed to destroy the control panel for the electricity.



The Revealed Truth

Raiden proceeded into the President's room, where, after Johnson mistook him for the female assassin, he was told about the Patriots, a mysterious organization that secretly ruled over America, even deciding who the next President would be, and that no one knew who the Patriots really were. Johnson only knew that every key decision was made by a group of twelve men called the Wisemen's Committee. He also explained that the terrorist



leader was actually his predecessor, 43rd U.S. President George Sears, who was known by the codename of Solidus Snake; a clone of the legendary soldier Big Boss, created in the 'Les Enfants Terribles' project. And it was Solidus who orchestrated the Shadow Moses Incident in 2005, but was removed from office by the Patriots. Solidus wanted to challenge the Patriots, unlike Johnson, who had simply wished to become one of them. Johnson also confirmed to Raiden that the Big Shell was merely a cover up for the construction of Arsenal Gear; a gigantic mobile fortress that employed mass-produced unmanned Metal Gear RAYs to

defend itself, and had the ability to fire nuclear warheads from anywhere on the planet. It also had access to the Military's Tactical Network, allowing it to have absolute control over the nation's armed forces and its nuclear arsenal. However, Arsenal's true purpose was to filter information from the internet, and other forms of digital communication, using an AI called GW. By doing this, the Patriots wished to shape history as they saw fit, while maintaining the secret of their own existence.

Johnson's last request was that Raiden locate GW's main programmer Emma Emmerich, and provide her with a computer worm to eradicate the AI. Feeling he'd said everything he needed to, Johnson suddenly grabbed Raiden's gun, attempting to have Raiden shoot him, thinking that he was to kill him. Raiden resisted. However, before the President could make Raiden kill him by shooting him inside the mouth, Revolver Ocelot suddenly intervened, shooting Johnson before Raiden could act. Afterwards, Snake told Raiden that he knew about the existence of the Arsenal Gear project and the Big Shell being a front for the project, and, as such, there was no threat of dioxins being released. Afterwards, Snake told Raiden what had happened during the Tanker Incident, how the Patriots had used the incident to launch a smear campaign against Snake, and how the U.S. Marines' RAY project had conflicted with the U.S. Navy's (and the Patriots') Arsenal Gear project.

Raiden then headed to find Emma. On the way he fought and defeated Vamp, confused as to how he could still possibly be alive. Before his defeat, Vamp revealed that even without the possibility of a nuclear strike, they could still use Arsenal's purified hydrogen bomb to emit an EMP over Manhattan knocking it offline. He also hinted that, contrary to what the press stated, Dead Cell was actually framed for the terrorist acts six months prior by the Patriots.



Raiden then rescued Emma, although he first had to convince Emma that he wasn't with the terrorist group, and managed to convince her that he wasn't among them by showing her that he had Codec nanomachines. While taking a short break, Emma told Raiden what she knew about the Patriots. She explained that she had created GW, distributing a program to assist it in a program supposedly used to counter the Y2K bug. Luckily, however, GW was not yet ready for activation and still lacked necessary factors for judging situations. Emma then mentioned that there was supposed to be a major test within the next few days which was to provide GW with complex data to study.

Twilight Sniping

The pair then proceeded to head to the Shell 1 Core. However, thanks to RAY's earlier missile attack, the bridge connecting the two Shells had been destroyed and they needed to cross the oil fence from Shell 2 Strut L to Shell 1 Strut E. Emma slowly made her way across, with Raiden and Snake providing cover with sniper fire. Emma was almost all the way across, when Vamp appeared once again, holding her at knife point. Raiden quickly fired at Vamp, 'killing' him once again, but before he fell into the ocean, he stabbed Emma. Snake ran to her, shooting down nearby Cyphers along the way. Snake then took her to the Shell 1 Core. When Raiden got there they were inputting the virus that Emma has created to destroy GW.



Emma and Otacon shared one final moment together, before she died as a result of her wound. At that moment, Snake discovered that the virus had not installed properly, and the trio came up with a plan to get inside Arsenal Gear, their only choice now being to take out Solidus and his men. Otacon, heartbroken, decided it would be best if he

attempted to help out the hostages as he would only get in their way. Snake reassured him that he was the only one who could save those hostages, and Otacon set off.

Arsenal Gear

After Otacon had left to rescue the hostages, Snake mentioned to Raiden that they may need a hand getting inside. Just then, the Cyborg Ninja appeared once again and revealed himself to actually have been Olga in disguise. Raiden was then knocked unconscious by Olga, with Snake saying that he didn't recall ever saying he was on Raiden's side.



When Raiden came to, he was tied to a torture bed completely naked. Solidus and Ocelot talked to him, with Solidus remembering that he taught Raiden everything he knew during the Liberian Civil War, when Raiden's real parents died. He was the star of Solidus' Small Boy Unit,

earning him nicknames like 'Jack the Ripper' and 'White Devil.' Solidus now had an eye patch over his left eye (which was damaged when Raiden took down the Harrier) with Ocelot commenting that he was the 'spitting image of Big Boss.'



After Ocelot left, Olga walked in and told Raiden about her child, whom she had never met because she was stolen by the Patriots. Olga told Raiden that if he were to fail this mission, her child would be killed. Olga could not let this happen, and she had been sent in by the Patriots to assist Raiden. She told him that Snake was waiting up ahead, before leaving the room.

Raiden then received a call from Rose, asking him if what Solidus said was true, which he admitted. He had been a child soldier, raised by Solidus to be a ruthless killing machine. After making his way through the hangar which housed many mass-produced Metal Gear RAY units, he was called by Rose again who nervously told Raiden that she had been a spy for the Patriots all along. She became his girlfriend, simply to keep an eye on him, but truly fell in love



with him. She changed her appearance to suit his desires, but her transmission was eventually cut-off with her final words being 'Jack... I'm... pregnant, Jack...your baby.'

After his bonds were released by Olga, a distressed Raiden pressed on and met up with Snake. Snake apologized for his earlier 'betrayal' saying he needed to use Raiden to sneak his way into Arsenal Gear. The two then battled their way through the Arsenal Tengu and, on the way, Otacon discovered that the Colonel Campbell who had been helping Raiden throughout the mission, wasn't the real Colonel, but an AI created by GW, cobbled together from Raiden's hopes and expectations. Just then, Snake was confronted by Fortune, who had been waiting for Snake as she believed that he killed her father, Scott Dolph. Snake and Fortune prepared to battle as Raiden headed up a



nearby ladder, and Raiden appeared on a giant platform. Concealing his presence, Solidus called out to Raiden, telling him of the S3 Plan, or Solid Snake Simulation, which had been devised to create the perfect warrior through VR training; training which Raiden had previously undertook.

Raiden was then forced to battle a horde of Metal Gear RAYs, destroying several with his Stinger missile launcher, before eventually giving in to exhaustion and falling to his knees. As Solidus emerged from his hiding place, he was ready to kill off Raiden before Olga jumped out in front of them, confronting Solidus. As she gave her life to save Raiden and, therefore, her child, Solidus ordered the remaining RAYs to kill Raiden, but Emma's GW virus started to take effect. Angered by this new development, Solidus destroyed the remaining RAYs and cursed the Patriots. As Fortune entered the area with a handcuffed Snake, Raiden passed out.

The World Needs Only One Big Boss!

When he awakened the next day, April 30th, Raiden found himself, Solidus Snake, Revolver Ocelot, Fortune and a handcuffed Solid Snake atop Arsenal Gear. Solidus then revealed his true intention: locating information within GW, regarding the identities of the Patriots. Solidus planned to hunt down the individual members, while Fortune and the Sons of Liberty would unintentionally serve as a diversion with their command of Arsenal Gear (since they actually planned to nuke Manhattan with the purified hydrogen bomb instead of going along with Solidus' original idea of using it to create an EMP field to black out Manhattan).

Ocelot, seemingly amused by this plan, then revealed to the group that the entire incident had actually been orchestrated by the Patriots all along, and that similarities between the Shadow Moses Incident and the Big Shell crisis were much more than mere coincidence. The renegade special forces unit Dead Cell, Raiden's relationship to the terrorist leader, and a computer virus that mimicked FOXDIE, were all elements scripted to turn Raiden into the



perfect soldier. Similar to President Johnson, the Patriots had used Solidus's ambitions for their own ends. However, the one thing that they had not planned on was the appearance of the real Solid Snake, which is why the AI Colonel had repeatedly told Raiden that Snake wasn't part of this simulation, and not to rely on his help. Ocelot then proceeded to kill Fortune, revealing that her apparent supernatural abilities were simply the result of Patriot technology, and climbed aboard Metal Gear RAY. However, when Ocelot fired RAY's payload, a dying Fortune miraculously deflected its missiles, protecting Raiden, Snake and Solidus.

As Ocelot prepared for a final assault, his arm suddenly spasmed and he was once again possessed by the 'spirit' of Liquid Snake. From RAY's cockpit, Liquid proclaimed that it was he who had leaked information about Arsenal Gear to Solid Snake in order to draw him out to the Big Shell. Armed with Ocelot's knowledge of the Patriots' whereabouts, he intended to go and destroy them all. After directing Arsenal Gear onto a collision course with Manhattan, Liquid climbed back inside RAY and took off. Snake, having broken free of his handcuffs, dove into the ocean after RAY.

Arsenal Is Going to Take Off!

Arsenal Gear proceeded on its course, crashing into the banks of New York City and through the streets of lower Manhattan, destroying a sizable portion of the Lower Westside of the city, before stopping at Federal Hall. After falling from Arsenal to the Hall's rooftop, and recovering their senses, Solidus attempted to explain his motives to Raiden: expressing frustration at being unable to pass on his own genetic legacy, he wished to be remembered in history. He wanted to destroy the Patriots, not for his own greedy ends, but so that he could restore freedom, civil rights, and opportunities, which had been taken away.



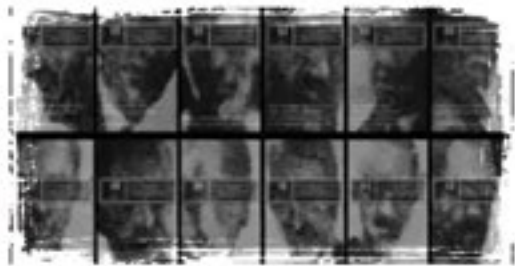
Raiden then received a Codec call from the Patriots, via another AI in the form of both the Colonel and Rose. The AI explained the true nature of the Patriots' goals to Raiden, hinting that they now existed on a digital plane of existence. The dawn of the digital age had allowed for an overabundance of trivial information that would remain intact forever, and accessible by anyone, which supposedly threatened the development of human society. Rather than 'Solid Snake Simulation,' the S3 Plan actually stood for 'Selection for Societal Sanity,' and the entire incident on the Big Shell had been orchestrated in order to test S3's crisis management capabilities, echoing what Emma had said earlier. The memetic information that would be passed on to future generations would therefore be decided by the Patriots, since they believed themselves to be in a stronger position to do so over humans. The Patriots considered most humans' tendency to prefer politically correct thinking over acceptance of unpleasant truths harmful to society as it would create great amounts of junk information that would bury what was indeed true.

The AI then ordered Raiden to kill Solidus, and he was forced to comply after realizing that the lives of Olga's child and Rosemary depended on his victory. Solidus told Raiden that he needed to kill him in order to determine the location of the Patriots from the nanomachines in Raiden's head. In order to provoke Raiden into fighting him, Solidus revealed it was he who had murdered his parents. After a vicious sword duel, Raiden struck down Solidus. His spine almost severed, Solidus fell from Federal Hall's roof to the steps below and crawled his way to the statue of George Washington, arm reaching out towards the figure, before finally collapsing upon its base.



Who Am I Really?

As Raiden stood outside the front of Federal Hall, Snake appeared and informed him that he and Otacon were going to find the Patriots using the virus disc (since it had been programmed to censor the names of the Patriots' leaders, it would have some form of indicator to identify what those names were), also revealing that the disc they had supplied Raiden with earlier was actually a dummy disc to ensure that their infiltration could go as planned without risking the Sons of Liberty gaining access to the worm. Raiden insisted on coming with them but Snake told him to stay, telling him that he still had things to do and 'people to catch up with.' Although the mission had been a simulation, Snake comforted Raiden with the fact that everything he had felt during the mission was his and his alone: it was up to him to decide what to pass on to the future, and to figure out his own purpose for himself. After Snake departed, Raiden was reunited with Rose, and the two vowed to make a life together, both figuratively and literally.



Some time later, Otacon and Snake 'successfully' traced the Patriots, but discovered that all twelve of them were dead, and had been for the last hundred years. Snake deduced that the information retrieved from Arsenal Gear was false; it was only a fake lead orchestrated by the Patriots. With this, Philanthropy had lost their only lead, the future of the Patriots uncertain.

Aftermath

This incident would later end up being cited as one of the primary reasons why America was to stay out of military affairs across the world, and thus why PMCs and the war economy would be placed in the forefront during early 2014.



Metal Gear Solid 4: Guns of the Patriots

Developer	Kojima Productions
Publisher	Konami
Director	Hideo Kojima Shuyo Murata
Producer	Hideo Kojima Kenichiro Imaizumi
Artist	Yoji Shinkawa
Writer	Hideo Kojima Shuyo Murata
Composer	Harry Gregson-Williams Nobuko Toda
Platform	PlayStation 3
Release date	June 12, 2008



In 2014, the world is in chaos, the ‘war economy’ plunging the world into never-ending battle. This fuels the need for private military companies, the five largest of which (together rivaling the power of the entire United States Army) are owned by a single mother company, Outer Heaven, with Liquid Ocelot at the helm. Liquid Ocelot, a fusion of the consciousness of Liquid Snake and the body of Revolver Ocelot, is once again set on world domination. Solid Snake, now also referred to as Old Snake due to his advanced accelerated aging, is dispatched to assassinate Liquid Ocelot as a personal favor to Roy Campbell.

2014 Liquid Sun

Liquid Sun refers to the 2014 incident in the Middle East, during which Liquid Ocelot made preparations for an armed insurrection against the Patriots.

Following the Big Shell Incident, the world had slipped towards a state of total war, with restrictions on military intervention in foreign countries easing, fueling the need for mercenaries. The world's economy gradually changed to one of war reliance, with most world conflicts resting heavily on the use of private military companies. The five largest of these were run by a single mother company, known as Outer Heaven, headed by Liquid Ocelot. In total, these five PMCs were enough to rival the entire United States military.



Old Snake

Solid Snake, now suffering from inexplicable advanced aging, had taken to living his life in solitude. During a visit to the grave of Big Boss, a helicopter made a landing within the cemetery, from which Otacon disembarked. Otacon informed Snake that Roy Campbell was waiting for him,



and that certain test results regarding Snake's condition had turned out positive and negative for proteome and mRNA analyses, respectively. Snake estimated that he probably had a year left to live in his current condition, at best. Otacon suggested that he see another doctor, but Snake declined, saying that it wouldn't make a difference, as he was never a normal person to begin with, as well as the fact that he was infected with FOXDIE. Campbell, now working in the UN's security council, had found Liquid lurking somewhere in the Middle East.

Returning to their base on board the aircraft Nomad, Campbell explained that private military companies were nothing like the mercenary groups in the past. Meanwhile,

Otacon was working on the Metal Gear Mk. II, with Sunny trying to serve him eggs, but Otacon was too busy to eat, hurting Sunny's feelings. Snake and Campbell then discussed about how the Pentagon's new battlefield systems had allowed the use of PMCs, and how ArmsTech (now known as AT Corp) had shifted from weapons development to security development to (as Snake puts it) 'make a nice cleaner battlefield'. Sunny, upon returning to the kitchen, noticed that there was a recently smoked cigarette butt on the counter and after stamping it out, scolded Snake about smoking. Campbell also explained the situation of the PMCs as well as Outer Heaven, and the revival of Liquid Snake as Liquid Ocelot. Snake, hesitant at first, agreed to a simple mission: to assassinate Liquid, after Campbell explained the situation of what would happen if Liquid wasn't stopped, mentioning that the event would be a severe version of Iron Mountain's Delphi Technique, and that the international community was unwilling to do a thing due to not wanting to harm the 'war economy'.



Gekko

Three days later, Snake made it to the center of the Middle Eastern war zone, in the back of a truck disguised as a member of the local militia. He attempted to give supporting fire for the militias, but his gun ended up jamming due to overheated ammo fusing with the cartridge, forcing him to leave them to continue deeper. Suddenly, however, the battle lulled, and unmanned Gekko descended on them, slaughtering a number of the militia men. Snake managed to escape detection and proceeded further into the city, also procuring another AK-102 after checking to see if it was booby-trapped.

Further on, Snake met up with the Metal Gear Mk. II inside a ruined building, which handed him a new device: the Solid Eye. Outside, battle ensued, but Snake made it through to the militia's safehouse by assisting them with the battle. Inside the house, he met gun launderer Drebin 893, who offered his services to Snake at a price, which they decided could be provided through the Mk. II. Drebin provided him with an M4 Custom, free of charge. At first, the gun's trigger locked on him, but Drebin injected him with more up-to-date nanomachines, which he stated would allow Snake to fire the weapon.

Haven Troopers

Making his way through the war-torn Middle East, Snake eventually made it to the Advent Palace where his informants planned to rendezvous with him. He was surprised to find Meryl Silverburgh waiting for him, with her new CID unit, Rat Patrol Team 01. With Liquid in a camp up ahead, Meryl explained the Sons of the Patriots System (SOP) to Snake. When questioned, Snake claimed that he was there merely to assess the threat of PMC activities on the UN's refugee programs. However, when he admitted that Campbell had sent him, Meryl reacted angrily, having previously learned of her true parentage via Campbell's affair with her mother, and the subsequent deterioration of their relationship following his apparent remarriage. After a brief outburst, Meryl's temper soon cooled due to the effects of her internal SOP nanomachines. When Rat Patrol member Johnny (Akiba) inadvertently attracted PMC attention, the Advent Palace was invaded by Liquid's Haven Troopers, a.k.a. the FROGS. Following a fierce gunfight from the top of the building all the way to the basement, Rat Patrol and Snake parted ways.



BB Corps

Snow headed north towards the enemy encampment where Liquid had been staying, but after getting involved in another heated battle, he witnessed an entire militia unit get wiped out thanks to the Beauty and the Beast Unit. Shortly afterwards, the whole unit quickly dispersed, leaving Snake to observe the aftermath in awe. During this event, he also briefly saw their leader, and briefly wondered whether Psycho Mantis had somehow returned from the dead, as their leader reminded him of Mantis.



Moving forward into the PMC camp, he made his way closer to Liquid before spotting Meryl and her Rat Patrol nearby. She called him on his Codec, and although angry that he was indeed there to kill Liquid and not threat assessment, she had to begrudgingly let him continue as she felt she was in no position to stop him.

War Zone

Before Snake could act, Liquid quietly commanded into his radio, 'Activate it'. Suddenly, all of the soldiers in the area, the Rat Patrol team included (with the exception of Johnny Sasaki) fell to the ground, foaming at the mouth and violently convulsing with mixed feelings and emotions such as crying,



anger, laughing and screaming. Snake was also affected, but not to the degree of the other soldiers. After a moment, Naomi Hunter appeared in front of Snake, injecting herself with a syringe before disappearing, although not before telling Snake that, if he doesn't wish to remain a prisoner to fate, he should go and fulfill his destiny. Snake was then carried to safety by Johnny, the only unaffected soldier.



Solid Sun

Solid Sun refers to the 2014 incident in South America, during which Liquid Ocelot continued preparations for his armed insurrection against the Patriots. Solid Snake and Hal Emmerich also initiated a rescue mission for geneticist Dr. Naomi Hunter, who had been assisting Liquid in his efforts to hack into the Sons of the Patriots System.

Having recovered from his ordeal in the Middle East, Snake awoke back on board the Nomad. There, Otacon informed him of a video message that they had received from Naomi from Otacon's old address, whom Snake recalled seeing at Liquid Ocelot's camp (and of whom traces of her DNA were found on the syringe she dropped to Snake). The message was a plea to be rescued, explaining about the SOP system, its use of third generation nanomachines and her indirect role in creating it from her development of the first generation nanomachines, and that Liquid Ocelot had forced her to cooperate because she was the creator of FOXDIE, and that the SOP system is derived from FOXDIE. The mail address included an encrypted map of Liquid's PMC base in South America, where she was being held, although Sunny and Otacon had to retrace the origin due to the direct address being faked. A message from Roy Campbell confirmed that Liquid's forces were operating in the area, as one of Liquid's PMCs, Pieuvre Armement, was acting as the de-facto group running the country after the regime that hired them ended up in shambles.

In addition, Campbell referenced Naomi's arrest after the Shadow Moses Incident and her escape, and speculated that Liquid Ocelot was the one responsible and not Solid Snake. Campbell also explained that Meryl Silverburgh had left the Middle East to continue tracking down Liquid herself, and that ARSOC was likely aware of Snake and Otacon's activities and Campbell's involvement. Therefore, Naomi was the only lead left to them. Roy Campbell also gave clearance for the Nomad to land in the El Dorado International Airport in Colombia with Snake also being given the cover job as a UN inspector. In addition, he also arranged for Snake to acquire a 4x4 vehicle as soon as he landed so he could get as close as he could to the Pieuvre Armement's security perimeter, and that afterwards it's a solo sneaking mission. Because the battle between Pieuvre Armement and the rebels is still upscaling, Roy Campbell also speculated that this would make sneaking into Liquid's facility much easier. Sunny was able to trace where the message originated, and they began the journey to South America.



Battle at Highland

After making it to the security perimeter in the 4x4, Snake traversed through the jungle, making use of his OctoCamo. He also contacted Roy Campbell while sneaking through the jungle, inquiring about the actual identities of the Patriots founders, citing that the data they got from Arsenal Gear was bogus due to them supposedly being dead in over a hundred years. Since the SOP System fit in with the Patriots' plans of global information control, Snake and Campbell concluded that Liquid's insurrection was aimed at destroying it. Snake felt that it doesn't matter whether it is Liquid or the Patriots who win, as the world will lose anyways, and feels the system is better off destroyed. However, Campbell reminded Snake that the System is the only thing that is allowing for relative peace to occur. Because of this, Snake and Campbell deduced that the System must be protracted in order to maintain the information society, and modern civilization, which meant that Liquid's ambitions had to be thwarted.

Reaching the vicinity of Liquid's South American base, Snake witnessed chaos erupt in a clearing below his position. As captured rebel soldiers were being led away by Pieuvre Armement forces, Laughing Octopus suddenly emerged from the shadows and proceeded to slaughter them, her facial appearance resembling that of Snake himself. Leaving one rebel alive, she warned him to remember her face as the one who killed his comrades and

let him escape. Vamp, to Snake and Otacon's surprise, was also present, and both departed the area by Stryker after failing to find Snake.

Snake then advanced onwards, with Otacon admitting to him that his OctoCamo was based on designs from DARPA that Sunny had found on the Internet, and that Laughing Octopus must also be using it. Snake also considered that he might have retired a bit too soon when learning about the rumor of how Mei Ling ended up promoted to captain of the USS Missouri, although he stated that he has nothing left to learn. After Snake made it into the heart of a battlefield, in which PMC and rebel forces were fighting, he received a Codec call from Campbell. He introduced Snake to a former member of a Combat Stress Platoon, whom he recognizes as Rosemary, Raiden's ex-fiancé and data analyst during the Big Shell Incident. He quickly deduced that Rose was Campbell's new wife, which explained why Meryl Silverburgh had showed such hostility towards her father.

Upon advancing further, Snake received another Codec call, this time from Raiden himself, claiming that he was very close by. He also explained that he had recently been sent on a mission for Big Mama to retrieve the body of Big Boss, although he was forced to end the call due to a firefight on Raiden's end. Snake then called Rose and learned that after the Big Shell Incident, Rosemary and Raiden got together, but his memories were starting to

resurface, causing him to stay out late, become drunk, and get into fights, before eventually leaving, which also explained why Rosemary ended up marrying Campbell. Snake then found Drebin yet again, who explained to him about the Beauty and the Beast Unit, and revealed to Snake that the Patriots were really just a system of AIs, and that the term ‘La-Li-Lu-Le-Lo’ was used by nanomachines to censor people from using their names. During this time, Drebin’s pet monkey, Little Gray, also snatched a cigarette from Snake, and as Snake was leaving attempted to beckon for him to give him another cigarette, apparently becoming addicted to cigarettes, although Drebin refused to let Little Gray have another.

Vista Mansion

Upon infiltrating the Vista Mansion as it was under siege by the rebel forces, Snake found Naomi in a secluded research building, behind the Vista Mansion, via an underground passage. Naomi, upon seeing Snake, explained that there were no guards present, since they knew she was powerless. However, before they were to leave, Naomi insisted she give Snake a full medical examination. Following the tests, she identified the cause of Snake’s accelerated aging, revealing that it was incurable; it was simply the way he was designed as

a clone. Naomi also discovered that the FOXDIE virus, which she had injected into Snake almost a decade ago, had since mutated. Since there were no more targets for it to attack, it had been circulating within his body since. The receptors on the virus had eventually broken down, and it would only be a matter of months before FOXDIE became a threat to other people. Naomi estimated that Snake had only half a year left to live as well, and he only had three months before the FOXDIE began to target other people indiscriminately. Snake then asked what would happen should he take his own life before that time, to which she replied that FOXDIE would die with him. She had also discovered a new strain of FOXDIE in Snake that had recently been injected into him, with Snake immediately suspecting that Drebin 893 was responsible.



In addition, Naomi explained to Snake what had actually happened in the Middle East. With Liquid attempting to disable the SOP System inside his PMC soldiers, the sudden freedom had proved too much for their minds to handle, and they had been driven mad by their previously suppressed emotions. Liquid had originally

intended to remove the System completely, but the results of the Middle East test forced him to change his plans. He was now attempting to gain control over the System and overthrow the Patriots, but he would need Big Boss’s DNA in order to do it.

Laughing Octopus

Suddenly, she began to experience a lot of pain, before Pieuvre Armament PMC troops burst into the building and grabbed her, telling her that she was no longer safe there. Before Snake could go after her, he was ambushed by a team of FROGS, commanded by Laughing Octopus, whom he was forced to defeat. Afterwards, Drebin called Snake upon procuring Octopus’s FaceCamo, with Snake accusing him of setting him up and placing FOXDIE in his body. Although Drebin admitted that he was spying on him, he denied actually giving him the virus. He then briefly explained Laughing Octopus’s history, shedding some light on her post-traumatic stress disorder, which had forced her to become a ‘beast of war’.

Breakthrough

With the help of some scouting tips from Raiden, Snake tracked Naomi to a helipad where she was being loaded onto a helicopter under Vamp’s supervision. Snake then shot Vamp in the head, with the Pieuvre Armament soldiers on the ground returning fire. Meanwhile, the soldiers aboard the helicopter took injections to lessen the effects of the lockdown on the SOP System, which was due to commence, as part of Liquid’s second attempt to gain access. Shortly thereafter, the soldiers on the ground began to suffer from the same seizures that had afflicted the PMCs in the Middle East. Just as Naomi appeared lost, Drebin managed to rescue her and Snake in his Stryker. With Drebin at the wheel and Snake manning the gun turret on top, the group escaped.



White Blood

Drebin's Stryker made it to a small village where civilians were running for cover from attacking Gekko. The Stryker eventually was forced to crash. Unable to proceed, they were ambushed by several of them. However, Raiden, revealing himself to be a Cyborg Ninja, appeared and engaged the Gekko in combat, before he eventually is restrained by several Gekko upon Vamp's arrival. Vamp notes their recent meeting. When he cuts Raiden with his knife and noticing Raiden's unflinching response to the wound, Vamp questions whether Raiden is actually immortal. Raiden replies that he's not immortal, but rather, he 'just [doesn't] fear death'. before breaking out of his bonds (due to Solid Snake sniping the bonds), slaughtering the remaining Gekko, before fighting Vamp. The fight grew more intense, eventually culminating in Raiden, upon being put in a half-nelson by Vamp, stabbing himself through the abdomen to significantly wound Vamp. Vamp eventually is defeated by Raiden and collapses, although not before inquiring ecstatically if Raiden is going to be the one who will finally kill him. Snake and Naomi escaped with the Metal Gear Mk. II onto Otacon's helicopter, picking up a heavily injured Raiden as they escaped. Meanwhile, Vamp revives himself from his wounds in his fight against Raiden, and calls Liquid Ocelot, asking if it was a good idea to let Naomi escape, with Ocelot responding that it is part of the plan. As Solid Snake's DNA failed to have him hack into the system

due to it not being 'pure enough', and the Pieuvre Armement forces are suffering from brain damage as a result of the lockdown, leaving nothing salvageable, they decide they need 'all of him' and that they need to locate 'them'. Naomi, after Snake and Otacon witnessed Vamp's revival, admits that the secret to Vamp's immortality was a nanomachine base that allowed Vamp to regenerate at a faster rate than usual, a nanomachine base that she developed herself, but someone else perfected. He was able to deliver an instruction to Snake before passing out entirely: 'Go meet – Big Mama.'



Aftermath

Acting on Raiden's advice, Solid Snake went to Eastern Europe and met up with Big Mama, formerly known as EVA from Operation Snake Eater, although he was ultimately unable to stop Liquid Ocelot from using Big Boss's body from accessing the SOP system. In addition, as Vamp implied in his report to Liquid Ocelot, Naomi's escape had been engineered by Liquid and her eventually defecting back to Liquid's group in the same mission, the specific reason being revealed on the fight of Outer Haven when the Patriots AI network was disabled by FOXALIVE. Vamp and Naomi would later end up killed on Shadow Moses Island before this event, by a combination of Raiden and his nanomachines being disabled and by suicide by terminating her own nanomachines and letting her cancer kill her, respectively.

Raiden's fight against the Gekko would later be told by various people and grew widespread over time, making Raiden somewhat of a legend. These stories would eventually reach Boris's ears by the time of the Abkhazia Coup in May 2018, to Raiden's embarrassment.

Third Sun

Third Sun refers to the 2014 incident in Eastern Europe, in which Liquid Ocelot successfully accessed the Sons of the Patriots System, using the DNA of Solidus Snake. During this time, Solid Snake met with resistance leader Big Mama of the Paradise Lost Army, whom Raiden had previously assisted, in order to locate the body of Big Boss.

Call Me Hal

On board the Nomad, Naomi Hunter helped Sunny with her cooking of eggs, realizing that she usually left the top on so she could do her sunny-side-up fortune telling. Sunny then revealed that Olga Gurlukovich was her mother when Naomi asked about her picture. After reciting the periodic table together, Naomi gave her blue rose to Sunny, which she had been admiring, and placed it in her hair. They also saved the eggs from burning.

Afterwards, Naomi identified Liquid Ocelot's location in Eastern Europe, where he was attempting to procure Big Boss's corpse. Big Boss's genetic code and biometric data would allow him to gain access to the SOP System, since his earlier tests with both Liquid Snake's and Solid Snake's DNA had proved insufficient. Naomi explained to Snake and Hal

Emmerich that neither clones' DNA had been a 100% match to Big Boss, due to genetic markers used in the cloning process, and the altered terminator genes. She revealed that it was for this reason that the Patriots had created Solidus Snake. Contrary to what Snake and Hal had originally thought, Big Boss's cells had been kept alive, and his body sustained as a biomort in a lab.

Meanwhile, Raiden's condition had become steadily worse. Sunny managed to successfully hack the Patriots' database, via AT Security, and locate Big Boss's body. Naomi, remembering the suffering that her brother had endured as a Cyborg Ninja, was angered that such projects still continued on, and felt sorry for Raiden. They were unsure if Raiden would live through the night, with



Naomi concluding that he needed an infusion of artificial White Blood, before he entered autotoxemia. However, they did not have the necessary equipment to give him the proper dialysis. Nevertheless, Raiden managed to tell them that the equipment could also be found in Eastern Europe, with world-renowned cyberneticist Drago Pettrovich

Madnar; the same man who had saved his life once before. Otacon then offered to contact Roy Campbell to get landing clearance. During the night, Naomi and Otacon talked more on their common backgrounds, since both had developed technologies that had ultimately been used for destructive ends. Otacon also told Naomi of his late stepsister, Emma Emmerich, who had been responsible for creating the worm cluster that had infected GW. Though Otacon was initially reluctant, the two later shared a night of passion within the cabin of a helicopter.

Midnight Shadow

Snake headed to Eastern Europe to find Big Mama, the leader of the Paradise Lost Army. Knowing that he would be shot on sight if seen in public by the occupying PMC forces, Snake used Laughing Octopus's FaceCamo to make himself appear younger, as well as dressing in civilian clothes.



However, upon refusing to pass through an ID checkpoint, which would have blown his cover, he was taken aside by Meryl Silverburgh, there with Rat Patrol Team 01. After arguing about their respective motives, the two parted on a solemn note.

Snake and Otacon decided that the best way to locate the resistance's hideout would be to follow one of its members. With a night curfew in full effect, Snake evaded the Raven Sword PMC soldiers, and discretely assisted the resistance member in his passage through the city streets. After trailing the member to an old church, he easily forced his way inside and finally met Big Mama.



Paradise Lost

Big Mama immediately recognized Snake as 'the legendary soldier', and revealed to him that she was his mother, having given birth to he and Liquid in the Les Enfants Terribles project. She then proceeded to explain to



him all she knew of Big Boss and the Patriots: along with herself, formerly known as EVA, and Big Boss, the Patriots had originally consisted of CIA operatives Major Zero, Sigint (Donald Anderson), Para-Medic (Dr. Clark), and Russian triple spy Ocelot. The organization had eventually split into two factions, in disagreement over the interpretation of a unified world, as envisioned by their idol The Boss. Big Boss had openly initiated hostilities against Zero in Outer Heaven and Zanzibar Land in the 1990s, while EVA and Ocelot had secretly masterminded the deaths of Para-Medic and Sigint in the early to mid-2000s.

Snow then learned the truth that Big Boss's body was not merely a brain-dead shell, but that his consciousness

had been 'locked away' by nanomachines, sustained with extensive life support. Big Mama showed Big Boss's supposed body to Snake, which was loaded into the back of a van, ready for evacuation. Unbeknownst to him, the biomort was actually the reanimated corpse of Solidus Snake, whose body parts had been used to restore Big Boss, in preparation for his eventual revival. The body had been in her possession after being recovered by Raiden.

Raging Raven

After the unexpected appearance of Dwarf Gekko compromised their location, Big Mama, Snake and the Paradise Lost Army were forced to flee. Taking the van containing the biomort with them, a daring pursuit ensued. With Big Mama and Snake supposedly escorting said van by motorcycle, they managed to force their way through dozens of Gekko and FROGS that blocked their way, but



were impeded by the Beauty and the Beast Unit member Raging Raven. A missile from an unmanned Slider caused their bike to crash, and though Snake avoided major injury, Big Mama was impaled on a protruding spike. As Snake helped to free her, she temporarily saw a vision of Big Boss, due to the similarity of the incident to one of 50 years earlier. Snake left to take down Raven, and after defeating her, helped an injured Big Mama to the Volta riverside. There, the biomort was being transported via boat, the empty van having been a decoy.



Violent Ceasefire

Reaching the Volta, Snake discovered that Liquid Ocelot had been waiting for them, having destroyed the boat carrying the biomort. After besting Snake in CQC, and notifying his brother of his success, Liquid departed on board his own vessel, accompanied by Vamp, and an apparently double-crossing Naomi. However, before Liquid could escape, he was surrounded by a joint U.S. Army Marine force, led by Meryl and Rat Patrol. Snake and Big Mama boarded Rat Patrol's boat, while Meryl ordered Liquid to surrender, his passage blocked by numerous gunboats and attack choppers. Having already gained control of the SOP System via the biomort's DNA, and the reconstructed AI GW, Liquid disabled the weaponry and vehicles of the opposing forces. Unable to fire their guns, as well as being forced to experience effects similar to when Liquid Ocelot attempted to hijack the SOP system in the Middle East, the American forces were left defenseless against an assault from Liquid's own FROG soldiers, resulting in many casualties, including Rat Patrol.

'Behold! Guns of the Patriots!'

— Liquid Ocelot

Following the massacre, Liquid has Vamp throw the biomort aboard Rat Patrol's boat, which landed in flames. Big Mama, still badly injured, leaped into the fire in a futile attempt to retrieve the body of 'Big Boss', while Snake attempted to pull her away. Liquid then shot the biomort in the head, ensuring its destruction, triggering a fiery explosion that caught Snake, badly burning the left side of his face. Otacon, operating from the Nomad, managed to stow the Metal Gear Mk. II away on Liquid's boat. Meanwhile, Johnny Sasaki was able to save Meryl from drowning, and the two embraced in a passionate kiss. Snake, however, was unable to save Big Mama and she died soon afterwards.

The Mk. II was eventually discovered and destroyed by Vamp, though not before monitoring a conversation concerning Liquid's next destination.

Aftermath

In large part because of Liquid Ocelot hijacking SOP, SOP ended up discontinued officially for the reason of it being dangerously easy to hack into. However, the Patriots' destruction a short while later also played a major role in the shutdown as well.

Twin Suns

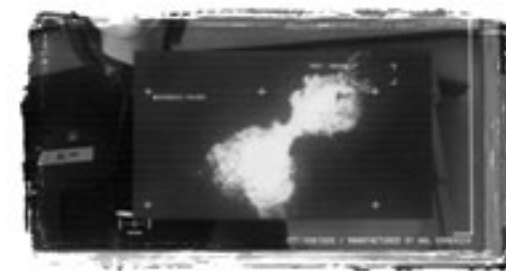
Twin Suns refers to Solid Snake's mission to stop Liquid Ocelot from acquiring Metal Gear REX's rail gun, on the abandoned Shadow Moses Island.

Return to Shadow Moses

Through the Metal Gear Mk. II, Solid Snake and Otacon were able to hear everything said on Liquid Ocelot's boat, during its escape on the Volta River in Eastern Europe. Although the Mk. II was discovered and destroyed by Vamp, they were able to hear enough to figure out Liquid's true plan: to take down the Patriots himself by destroying the main satellite of JD, the coreAI. To do that, he needed a weapon that was powerful enough to fire a missile into space, but was not governed by the Patriots AI network, as Liquid could not access WMDs due to it being governed by JD, and not Sons of the Patriots.

As Snake and Campbell wondered how Liquid would be able to achieve this, Otacon deduced that Liquid was planning to use Metal Gear REX, its rail gun being the only WMD left outside the Patriots' control to be able to launch a nuke. Deducing that Liquid was planning to revisit Shadow Moses (and confirmed by Mei Ling), Snake followed him

to Alaska, and to the one place he never thought he would return, re-navigating the route he took almost a decade earlier to reach Metal Gear REX's Underground Base. Raiden, despite Sunny's protests of his dialysis not being complete yet, also attempted to tag along with Snake, largely because he believes that only in aiding Snake take down Liquid and the Patriots can he truly be free from being a pawn to the proxy. However, Snake refused, realizing that Raiden misinterpreted his advice years ago, and also informed him that he 'cannot see the day' as long as he follows him, and eventually admitting that Raiden at least has a family to go back to, while Snake himself has less than a few months before he becomes a bioweapon. Raiden, however, snaps at Snake and reminds him that he doesn't possess a family (referring to his child's miscarriage and Rose's separation from him and her remarriage to Campbell) and that he, like Snake also has nothing, before collapsing. Before losing consciousness, also begged Snake to 'not leave me alone'. While on the way to Shadow Moses, Solid Snake had a dream about his first visit to Shadow Moses, one which he abruptly wakes up from in a panic.



Cold Memories

Otacon inserted Snake at a snowfield west of the heliport. After evading a patrolling Gekko, Snake once again arrived at the helipad.

As he made his way to the nuclear warhead storage building, Snake was visited by a series of haunting flashbacks while evading the Dwarf Gekko. Otacon suggested this time that Snake can enter the snowfield through the back of the Storage Building rather than going through the commander's office in the basement. Snake activated the door by retracing his steps to Otacon's old office with the new Metal Gear Mk. III, but not before witnessing Naomi Hunter and Vamp via surveillance camera on their way to REX's hangar.

Crying Wolf and Vamp

Snake emerged into the snowfield where he fought and killed Sniper Wolf, encountering, to his shock, her doppelganger, BB member Crying Wolf with a rail gun. After engaging in a lengthy sniper duel, Snake defeated her and continued to the Underground Base. However, Snake had to make a detour from the blast furnace to the casting facility after the elevator he used nine years ago to get to the warehouse was locked. Once there, Otacon used the Metal Gear Mk. III to reactivate the elevator, taking them up to where REX was still laying unmoved, exactly where Snake had left it. Unfortunately, also waiting for him were Vamp and Naomi. Snake fought Vamp, and as he was already well aware of Vamp's regenerative capabilities, managed to subdue him with a CQC administered nanomachine-suppressor injection.

'Cry. Until your eyes run RED!'

– Crying Wolf



Atonement

Vamp was now mortal, but still just as deadly. Suddenly, Raiden, fully recovered after a white blood infusion, appeared to fight Vamp while Snake fended off the Suicide Gekko swarming the base. Snake destroyed all the Gekko, and after receiving many wounds, Raiden managed to pull off a devastating swipe to Vamp very much in the way he had killed Solidus. Vamp, now having mortal wounds for the first time, was euthanized by Naomi by a full dose of nano-suppressant.

With Vamp defeated, Naomi apologized to Snake and Otacon, before revealing that she had cancer, and, overwhelmed by guilt, injected herself with the syringe. Having effectively committed suicide, Naomi died in the same place her adoptive brother, Gray Fox, had. They mourned for their loss, accepting that they would never know where Naomi's true allegiance had lied.

Fight of the Metal Gears

With more Suicide Gekko on the way, Otacon used the Mk. III to reactivate REX. With Raiden hanging on, Snake used it to escape from the collapsing base. Upon emerging, Raiden was crushed by falling rubble, and Snake was confronted by Metal Gear RAY, being piloted by Liquid. Though REX was handicapped due to the loss of its rail gun and radome, it still had much of its previous weaponry with it, such as the anti-tank missiles, free-electron laser, and machine cannons. Otacon also activated a program, secretly installed on board REX while it was still in development, which utilized its hull as a weapon in itself, drastically increasing its chances against RAY, although it could only be activated in certain situations. Though RAY had been specifically designed to destroy REX and its many variants, Snake was still able to defeat the more advanced Metal Gear model.



'Moses! Where our fates were born.
And where yours ends, Snake!'

– Liquid Ocelot



Followings RAY's defeat, the machine crashed to the ground, with Liquid Ocelot stumbling from the cockpit. Lying on the ground, Liquid stretched out his arm and called to Snake, apparently in some pain. Reminded of events from nine years earlier, Snake speculated as to the cause of Liquid's suffering and exclaimed the word 'Fox...', after which Liquid finished with 'DIE!!!', both partaking in an act of role reversal. Liquid then collapsed, but immediately raised himself from the ground, having only been toying with Snake, and claiming that the FOXDIE virus would not work this time. Liquid then made his escape towards the pier, laughing as Snake attempted to give chase, the latter's arm and leg having been injured by REX's rough landing during the battle's aftermath.

Everything Ends

Snake struggled to catch up with Liquid, until he noticed a figure emerging from the ocean moments later. The form was that of Liquid's Outer Haven, an Arsenal Gear model warship that had been stolen from the Patriots. As Liquid boarded the ship, he boasted that he would destroy JD with REX's rail gun, and bring the Patriots' System under his control via GW, at which point everything would end, and then begin anew. Snake fired his rifle at Liquid, but his injured arm prevented him from aiming accurately, and he fell to his knees in exhaustion. Liquid then directed Haven to turn about and then ram into the pier, hoping to



kill the weakened Snake. Meanwhile, Raiden, having cut off his own arm to break free of the collapsed rubble, raced to Snake's aid, using his cybernetically-enhanced strength to stand in the ship's path, and prevent Snake from being crushed. Similar to Gray Fox before him, Raiden yelled for Snake to get away as the machine's weight pressed down on him. With the pier crumbling away behind Raiden, Snake finally came to and dragged himself away,

just as Raiden's strength yielded to Haven. The Cyborg Ninja was then seemingly crushed beneath the ship, yelling out the name 'Rose' as he fell. Outer Haven eventually retreated when the USS Missouri, now captained by Mei Ling, arrived at the port and opened fire on the ship. When Snake looked down at Raiden's body, the result of Raiden's actions was enough to send him into a coughing and wheezing fit out of disgust. Snake and Raiden were later recovered and carried aboard the Missouri.

Aftermath

Raiden would ultimately survive the near-death experience, and would hold off the FROGs blocking Snake's way to the microwave hallway. Likewise, Snake and Otacon ended up uploading FOXALIVE and halting the rail gun launch, although Liquid later revealed that FOXALIVE was in fact his real plan. After the mission, Raiden would be reoutfitted with a more human-looking cyborg body, but would ultimately join a PMC in large part because he couldn't get a civilian job because even the human body looked unnatural. When he lost his left arm to a duel with Samuel Rodrigues in Africa, he angrily lamented the loss of his left arm again, referring back to the events of this mission.



Old Sun

Old Sun refers to the 2014 incident on the Bering Sea, in which Liquid Ocelot attempted to destroy the Patriots' core AI, resulting in a naval battle between Outer Haven and the USS Missouri.

Everything Must End

With Outer Heaven leader Liquid Ocelot in possession of Metal Gear REX's rail gun, he had the means to destroy the Patriots' core AI, JD, with a nuclear strike. On board the Arsenal Gear-class warship, Outer Haven, Liquid headed out into the Bering Sea, 494 nautical miles (915km) from the Bering Strait, in order to strike the U.S. military satellite housing JD. With the satellite orbiting at 10 kilometers per second, and the nuke's damage radius of 300 meters, JD was to be attacked as it reached its perigee in order to conduct an accurate launch.

Briefing U.S. military personnel on board the USS Missouri, Navy Captain Mei Ling intended to attack the submersible Haven when it surfaced to make its nuclear strike. Though trailing behind the technologically superior warship, the Missouri would be able to catch up to Haven while it made its launch preparations. However, the

crew would have to rely on their eyes to locate it, as the Missouri had been stripped of most of her equipment, and also lacked any electronic warfare capabilities. Since a direct attack would be useless, thanks to Liquid's control of the SOP System, a strike team would infiltrate Haven during the assault and upload a worm cluster into the ship's AI, GW. Solid Snake volunteered for the mission, making no secret of his disregard for his own life, along with Meryl Silverburgh and Johnny Sasaki.

Having received intelligence from Naomi Hunter, the strike team planned to catapult aboard the vessel after it opened its top cover to fire the bridge-mounted rail gun. They would then penetrate GW's physical server room and upload the worm cluster, which had been created by Naomi and Sunny. The worm would both prevent the nuclear launch and wipe GW's programming. Since it would need to stay integrated within the Patriots' network, in order to assume JD's functions after its destruction, GW could not be deactivated to prevent the worm's upload. However, the server room would be heavily defended by Liquid's troops, along with microwave directed energy weapons.

Meanwhile, gun launderer Drebin 893 provided his services to the Missouri's military personnel, issuing them with 'naked' weapons, along with catapults that the strike team would be using.

At Dawn

As the Missouri closed the distance to Outer Haven, Snake (carrying Otacon's Mk. III), Meryl, and Johnny, prepared to board the enemy ship. Commencing fire to defend against Haven's missile barrage and deployed Metal Gear RAY units, the Missouri collided into the other vessel, plowing along its side. The strike team then activated their catapults and ascended upwards onto Haven, though Johnny hit the side of the ship and fell into the ocean. Meryl landed in a different area of the ship than planned, injuring her ankle, while Snake's successful jump forced him to continue the infiltration alone.

'Failure will spell doom for the human race.'

– Roy Campbell



Avoiding the dense force of Gekko and Haven Troopers deployed on deck, Snake made it to an elevator on the far side of the ship, and descended into the heart of Haven. Entering a large computer control room, he was forced to take on a wave of Haven Troopers, which he ultimately defeated. Snake was then confronted by the leader of the Beauty and the Beast Unit, Screaming Mantis. Snake was able to overcome her apparent psychic abilities by suppressing his nanomachines, and then stole Mantis' mind control puppet, allowing him to defeat her. Shortly afterwards, the ghost of Psycho Mantis appeared in her place and, after making several psychic predictions, revealed himself to be the one controlling all of the BB members, through the body of Screaming Mantis. Although he prepared to attack, another spirit, that of The Sorrow, appeared and banished Mantis forever.

I Am Lightning

The Beauty and the Beast Unit was defeated, but Snake's mission was far from over. Continuing towards GW's server room, Meryl and Johnny appeared in time to save Snake from another wave of Haven Troopers. While Snake proceeded onwards, Meryl and Johnny stayed behind to fend off the seemingly endless supply of soldiers, eventually running low on ammunition. In the heat of battle, Johnny proposed to Meryl, claiming he had always loved her. Initially, Meryl refuses his proposal. Since she always wants to do things her way, she herself proposes to Johnny, who gladly accepts. Snake was then further outnumbered by knife-wielding Haven Troopers, who ambushed him directly outside the microwave corridor leading to the server room. A still armless Raiden then appeared to protect him, requesting that he upload the virus himself, as his body could withstand the microwave emitters. However, Snake refused, with Raiden relenting after further argument. Allowing Snake to pass, Raiden decided to keep the encroaching enemy soldiers away. However, the battle was still heavily one-sided, and Raiden, although initially fighting well, was quickly swarmed and outnumbered.

SNAKE entered the microwave corridor, and with no other choice available, began to make his way past the powerful emitters. Forced to walk due the immense pain, he eventually collapsed and forced himself to crawl the



remaining distance, growing weaker every second. His OctoCamo was stripped from his skin and his Solid Eye exploded from the waves. However, against all odds, he made it to the server room, where the Metal Gear Mk. III uploaded the virus, just as Snake was swarmed by an army of Dwarf Gekko.

Full Circle

With the successful upload of the worm, the battle quickly turned. The soldiers ambushing Raiden, Meryl and Johnny went into hysterics as their nanomachines shut down, and the Dwarf Gekko surrounding Snake deactivated. The unmanned RAY units attacking the Missouri also shut down, with some sinking into the ocean depths. Shortly thereafter, a video of Naomi Hunter, programmed into the worm, appeared on the server room computer screens. She explained that the worm, named FOXALIVE, had used GW as a conduit into the Patriots'

entire network, destroying the AI cores, disabling SOP, and bringing the war economy to a halt. The Patriots had apparently intended to extend their nanomachine control to the civilian population, and she had been unwilling to allow this. Having intentionally misled Snake and Otacon into carrying this out, Naomi apologized for her deception. Exhausted, Snake collapsed into unconsciousness.

'The war is over.
But we've still got a score to settle.'

— Liquid Ocelot

Liquid Ocelot found Snake, while Otacon had gone to find medical help, and dragged him to the top of Outer Haven. Explaining to Snake that the worm's upload had been his intention all along, as well as the history of the Philosophers and the war between Zero and Big Boss, Liquid proclaimed that Big Boss's dream of Outer Heaven had come to pass. Challenging Snake to a final hand-to-hand duel, he restored his brother's stamina



with an injection, then engaged him in CQC. During the long fight, Revolver Ocelot's psyche slowly began to resurface for the first time in years. Upon being defeated by Snake, the Liquid persona disappeared, and Ocelot (restored to his original psyche) stated that he was 'Liquid's doppelganger', and exclaimed 'You're pretty good', before dying.

Otacon later discovered that Sunny had modified the FOXALIVE worm to 'destroy the brain, but leave the brain stem intact'. Rather than destroying the Patriots' system entirely and plunging the world into chaos, Sunny had programmed the worm to remove their control while preserving the energy and resource networks essential to modern society, allowing the U.S. to truly live free for the first time in many years.



Naked Sin

Naked Sin and Naked Son refer to Solid Snake's intentions to kill himself at the grave of his father Big Boss, following the defeat of Liquid Ocelot in 2014. During this time, Meryl Silverburgh and Johnny Sasaki married, and Raiden was reunited with his family, occurring a month after the fall of the Patriots' System.

Everything Begins

After being given clearance to land at an airfield, the Nomad was used as a chapel for the wedding of Meryl Silverburgh and Johnny Sasaki. Roy Campbell finally returned to bury the hatchet with his daughter and give her away to her new husband. Also attending were Otacon, Sunny, Mei Ling, Jonathan, and Ed, who acted as the master of ceremonies and officially wed the couple. However, before the wedding could be completed, one final guest, Drebin, made an appearance providing the happy couple with a shower of flowers.

Drebin, while inebriated due to his nanomachines no longer moderating his alcohol intake, filled in the gaps for Otacon. He revealed that all of the Drebins were, in actuality, Patriot agents, which is why they were able to

hack into the SOP System so easily, as well as implying that the Patriots deliberately allowed gun launderers to exist, and he was under orders from the Patriots to assist Solid Snake and Rat Patrol Team 01 in their mission to exterminate Liquid, although the Patriots had no idea that the result of the mission would also end up terminating their control over society. In fact, Rat Pt. 01 was an anagram for 'PatR10t' (Patriot), finally left no doubt as to the team's true benefactors. However, he also told Otacon that he has absolutely no hard feelings for removing them from power, and in fact was glad because it freed him and his co-workers to create their own company known as DREBINS, although he also got into a drunken rant about the world being in a deep debt that even PMC regulation laws cannot overcome, as well as thinking that things may start over again with the UN, comparing its history to that of the Patriots.

Sunny, meanwhile, had made her first outside friend, and asked Otacon if she could give him the Metal Gear Mk. III. Otacon obliged, and also told her that she could leave the Nomad if she wanted to. Sunny, however, only had one thing on her mind: Snake. After she asked where Snake was, Otacon became emotional, telling her that Snake was sick and needed some time to rest.

Meanwhile, at a hospital, Raiden was recovering from his operation, which had replaced his cyborg implants with ones more closely resembling a human body. As he

rested, Rosemary entered with a mysterious young boy, but Raiden, at first, refused to speak to her. In tears, Rose revealed that both her marriage to Roy Campbell and her miscarriage were lies to protect them and Raiden from the Patriots, a cover for which Campbell had to sacrifice his own family. She also revealed that the boy she was with was Raiden's son, John. After one look at the boy, all the hostility and doubt in Raiden's mind was extinguished, and all three of them embraced, Rosemary promising to never let him go again.

Father & Son

Meanwhile, Solid Snake visited the grave of Big Boss once again. Collapsing in front of the grave, he vowed that the last thing for him to do - his final mission - was to take his own life, thereby erasing his genes from the Earth, and removing the threat of the mutated FOXDIE strain. Finishing his last cigarette, he put his gun in his mouth and fired.



In the end, however, Snake couldn't go through with it, and had fired into the air at the last second. The stress of nearly dying had apparently taken its toll, as Snake remained on his hands and knees, panting and sweating profusely. In that moment, Snake heard a voice: 'That's right. Good. No need for you to go just yet. It's been a long time Snake.'

Snake turned to see Big Boss, very much alive, but also brandishing the Patriot assault rifle. Surprised, Snake quickly reloaded his gun, but after a few moments of holding each other at gunpoint, Big Boss dropped his gun, easily overpowering Snake, and embraced him, assuring his son that he was not there to fight. Telling Snake that it was 'time to put aside the gun and live', he took Snake's gun from his hand, unloaded it, and dropped it on the ground. He proceeded to explain that his body had been reassembled (using pieces of Liquid Snake and Solidus Snake) by EVA and Ocelot rather than simply kept alive on a machine, and that the body in EVA's van that was burnt to ashes by Liquid Ocelot in Eastern Europe was in fact the body of Solidus. Ocelot was able to use the genetic code from this body to access the SOP system, because Solidus, unlike Liquid Snake or Solid Snake, was a perfect clone of Big Boss. He also admitted that Big Mama and Naomi Hunter had also been involved in planning the events of Snake's mission.

Big Boss then explained to Snake how Ocelot, in order to fool the system, used a combination of nanomachines and psychotherapy to turn himself into 'Liquid's mental doppelgänger', as well as fully explaining the history of the Patriots from his point of view. Once the virus opened the gateway from GW to the Patriots, Big Boss was able to finally determine the location of Zero. He then showed Snake an elderly, wheelchair-bound Zero on a life support machine. He mentioned the names of the founders of the Patriots that have passed on and claimed that the Patriots would not be completely destroyed until he took everything 'back to Zero' and sent Zero 'back to nothing'. With that, Big Boss pulled the plug from Zero's air supply, killing him.



With Zero dead, Big Boss was the last Patriot. When Snake asked if he would be 'going back to zero as well', Big Boss replied that he would, although he wouldn't have to do so by his own hand: The FOXDIE virus injected into Snake by Drebin that killed Ocelot and EVA was also set to kill Big Boss, and he was already starting to feel the effects, and also admitted that Naomi was the one who told him this, as well as the events of that mission. Big Boss also explained

that Naomi also instructed him to tell Snake that this FOXDIE virus also replaced the original mutated strain that Snake was injected with by Naomi, and therefore there was no threat of him becoming a biological weapon; though the new FOXDIE would eventually mutate as well, that would only be if Snake managed to live that long. Snake helped his pained father over to The Boss's grave, where he saluted her, as he had done fifty years earlier, and sadly stated that he had been dead since the day he killed her. Big Boss also understood the original meaning behind The Boss's last will: that it was not about changing and reuniting the world as one, but rather leaving the world as it is. Sharing one last smoke with his son, Big Boss, as a last request, asked Snake to spend the remainder of his life peacefully and not waste it fighting, and the two finally made peace. In his last words, Big Boss simply said, 'This is good, isn't it?'. And so it was how the greatest soldier of the Twentieth Century passed away at the grave of the woman whose ideals had started it all; and whose life and death had shaped him into the person that he was, with Snake still kneeling down, looking at him.

Here's to You

Sometime later, Otacon caught up with Snake and asked him where he was going. Snake, who had decided to quit smoking, responded that 'there's one thing [he] still needs to do', that was to 'see this age off and see what the future brings'. Otacon agreed with Snake about his friend being unable to pass on anything to the next generation and insisted that he and Sunny accompany him to document the final days of his hero and friend and, after some persuasion, Snake agreed.



Later, Sunny was cooking eggs in the Nomad, finally making them perfectly. Proudly, she exclaimed:

'Sorta looks like the sun... it's rising again.'

— Sunny



Metal Gear Rising: Revengeance

Developer	Platinum Games
Publisher	Konami
Director	Kenji Saito
Producer	Atsushi Inaba
Designer	Takahisa Taura Junichi Oka Takanori Satou Taku Saito Tomoyuki Hayashi Akiteru Naka
Writer	Etsu Tamari
Composer	Jamie Christopherson
Platform	Multi Platform
Release date	February 19, 2013



This game is a **non-canonical** entry in the Metal Gear series

Four years after the events of Liquid Ocelot’s Insurrection, Raiden has been contracted for VIP protection, military training, and other duties by a private military company (PMC): Maverick Security Consulting, Inc., an American PMC based in Colorado, in a developing country piecing itself back together after a bloody civil war. Raiden largely did this to support his family without having to return to direct combat situations. Raiden is protecting a VIP, when they are attacked by a cyborg organization led by the cyborg Samuel Rodrigues, which eventually leaves Raiden completely defeated. Raiden is reconstructed by his PMC, and his search for Sam and the company he’s working for, Desperado Enforcement LLC., drives him into a quest for vengeance.



2015
Ambush at Africa

In 2015, the Nevada-based private military company/ private security provider Maverick Security Consulting, Inc. was stationed in an unnamed African country, in order to help rebuild the country after a long, destructive civil war had finally ended.

Ambush

Three years later, order had been restored in the country. The Prime Minister, N'mani, then met with the Maverick member, Raiden, and discussed his amazement that they were able to restore the country to its original form and improve the lives of its citizens in only three short years. After giving thanks to his aide as well as the will of the people, N'mani then explained that Raiden and the Maverick PMC deserved credit as well. Raiden then simply informed him that they were just doing their job. N'mani then mentioned that he was initially untrusting of them due to their status as a PMC, and the PMCs stigmas regarding their stance as propagators of war, although he admitted that they trained his army well and restored order, and expressed that he may have been wrong in his views about PMCs. Raiden then explained that Maverick's closer to a

private security provider, as their contracts focus mostly on security, and also cited a saying from the Samurai code, 'one sword keeps another in the sheath.'

However, their limo unexpectedly stopped. N'mani's advisor then proceeded to ask what was going on, before Courtney Collins explained that someone was blocking the road. The lead APC's gunner then proceeded to warn the person to clear the road, before he is forced to use lethal measures. He then fired at the approaching person, a Cyborg Ninja named Samuel Rodrigues, before the latter cut up the gunner. Two more APCs released several Maverick soldiers in an attempt to stop Sam, while the third APC escorted the limo away. Raiden and Courtney then explained to the cabinet and Maverick's commander, Boris respectively, that they were ambushed by a cyborg. When questioned whether the soldier belonged to any of their competitors, Courtney then explained that the XIFF identified the cyborg as being 'unaffiliated.' Boris then proceeded to notify all checkpoints and ordered them to evacuate the prime minister. Unfortunately, another cyborg managed to stop the escorting APC with a RPG round, with the soldiers also being slaughtered by several of the soldiers. The limo then was forced to escape while evading barricade vehicles. Eventually, they are cornered by more cyborgs. Raiden then, under Boris's orders, disembarked from the limo to confront the cyborgs, also ordering the bodyguards to guard N'mani. After shedding his business suit and then bringing out his HF Blade, he

attacked the soldiers, and also collapsed a large part of the wall to ensure they don't pursue the fleeing limo.



Rules of Nature: Rematch

Unfortunately, the limo ended up ambushed at the harbor. The bodyguards managed to take out the cyborgs that were attacking the vehicle effortlessly. However, they later bore witness to the arrival of the enemy group's cavalry: a modified Metal Gear RAY unit. The RAY unit then proceeded to fire its onboard plasma cannon at the limo, sending it flying as well as severely damaging the building behind it. N'mani survived and struggled to get out. The bodyguards then attempted to rush to the Prime Minister's aid, but they were stopped by the group's leader,

Sundowner, cutting down the first bodyguard with two machetes, and entering a quick duel before disarming the other, and then decapitating him with the machetes combined giant shears. He then grabbed the Prime Minister by the leg and hoisted him onto his shoulder.

Boris then informed Raiden that the limo was in trouble. Tracking the location of the limo via the Soliton Radar, Raiden made his way back. Raiden then arrived to witness this, and attempted to stop Sundowner. Sundowner, recognizing Raiden as Jack, then told him that he wants N'mani dead, because Africa has gotten too peaceful. He then explained that he wanted to restore the war economy, which had waned due to the shutdown of SOP four years earlier, and viewed it as his livelihood. Sundowner then took out a machete, although he assured Raiden that he won't kill N'mani yet, as he still had his uses before escaping. Raiden attempted to pursue him, but Sundowner then had the RAY unit attack Raiden, forcing the latter into a battle with the machine. He then proceeded to damage the weapon, culminating in him parrying its blade arm and destroying it. He then was ordered by Boris to pursue Sundowner. He then arrived at a rooftop, but he then discovered that RAY was still operational. Raiden then proceeded to destroy its remaining arm after jumping across its missiles. Even that, however, did not stop the RAY unit, which hoisted him into a clock tower. Raiden then ran down the clock tower building, evading its missiles, before vivisectioning it by dragging his sword down its spine.

The Only Thing I Know for Real

Sundowner, carrying the Prime Minister's prone body, was then surrounded by several Maverick soldiers. However, Sundowner proceeded to jump towards a passing train. Raiden, witnessing this, rushed over to the train, eventually using his ninja run to run across the buildings to gain enough distance to board the train. Raiden also evaded a tiltrotor vehicle, upon being warned of its presence by Boris.

Raiden eventually found Sundowner, Sam, and N'mani at the front of the train, the last being chained to several cargo boxes. Sundowner then informed Raiden that N'mani's usefulness had been expended. He then proceeded to slice N'mani's neck. Raiden attempted to save the prime minister, but Sam stopped him. Sundowner then proceeded to enter a rant regarding how war's benefits have been underreported, while proceeding to strangle N'mani. N'mani, realizing that he will die, then told Raiden to forget about saving him, and to stop Sundowner instead. Sundowner then proceeded to release the Prime Minister from his chains, and then proceeded to impale N'mani through the back, some of his blood spilling near Raiden's left eye, before dropping him off the train. Raiden attempted to attack Sundowner to avenge N'mani, but Sam stopped him again. Sundowner then made his escape via the tiltrotor, also informing Sam that Raiden was his to take care of.

The train proceeded into fight in the tunnel, with Raiden and Sam commencing their duel. A combination of both Sam and Raiden's different sword techniques, as well as Raiden holding back left Raiden completely outmatched. Raiden then had his left eye damaged by Sam's extendable shoto, with Sam also blowing up a propane tank before emerging from the flames, also dismembering Raiden's left arm. Raiden, upon witnessing his arm being severed, irritably lamented the loss of his arm again. Boris then informed Raiden that he needs to last long enough to reach the end of the tunnel, as they are on their way. Raiden then continued to attempt to fight Sam, buying time. However, Sam overpowered him, causing Raiden to hang onto the ledge of the last car, at Sam's mercy. Sam then attempted to finish Raiden off, but noticed he was out of the tunnel. He was forced to break off from finishing off Raiden to deflect gunfire from Raiden's cavalry, three APCs, one of which Boris personally commanded. Sam then made his escape via the tiltrotor. Boris attempted to shoot down the tiltrotor with a missile, but the tiltrotor was revealed to possess flares, which it used to prevent the missile from making contact. Boris then attempted to aim at it again, but it disappeared through the ridge before he could get a good shot at it. Raiden witnessed this, before passing out from his injuries.

Aftermath

Sometime after the mission, Maverick recovered Raiden's dismembered left arm, and proceeded to retrieve all of the files from it, doing it on a weekly basis due to the files being corrupted from damage. In addition, Raiden also underwent emergency surgery due to his injuries, which resulted in the removal of his left eye, as Sam's attack had completely destroyed its optical nerve. Throughout the surgery, because of various side effects caused by the forced removal of his left arm, Raiden also suffered temporary memory loss and intrusive flashbacks to his past in Liberia. He eventually had his body reconverted into a new cyborg body. Raiden made this decision because of the attack and due to his feeling that the Patriots' experiments didn't leave him with much of a body anyways, thus deciding to just finish their work.

As such, because their old cybernetics person went into hiding, Maverick hired the German cyberneticist surgeon, Dr. Wilhelm Voigt, nicknamed Doktor, to do the conversion process. At the time, Doktor was unfamiliar with full-body conversions, although he managed to master it as a result. Raiden was originally supposed to receive a cybernetic implant, but it wasn't ready before the surgery, forcing him to wear a makeshift eyepatch for a while, although Raiden ultimately concluded that, given the function of the eyepatch, that he didn't need the eye, at least not during his missions. Raiden also harbored

intense desires for revenge against the group, revealed to be Desperado Enforcement LLC.

The remains for the downed RAY were later confiscated by Maverick and analyzed, learning it had in fact been composed of CNT fiber.

Three weeks after the incident, Maverick discovered that Desperado was involved in a coup against the Abkhazian government led by the Abkhazian extremist Andrey Dolzaev. During this time, several job requests for Maverick, including conducting drills for the Brazilian Special Op Forces in Rio de Janeiro, playing a terrorist organization for an anti-terror training program for the South African police forces, and doing security detail for the Swiss Confederation, were temporarily frozen, in order to keep Raiden focused on his mission, as well as to save up their money and resources, which Boris felt was partially responsible for their failure in Africa.

As far as Desperado, the event was considered a tremendous success, to the extent that it even formed the basis of a VR exercise, which was implemented into the IF prototype LQ-84i.

Abkhazian Coup

The Abkhazian Coup was instigated by the PMC Desperado Enforcement LLC. on behalf of extremist and wanted terrorist Andrey Dolzaev in 2018 to overthrow the parliamentary government of Abkhazia via military coup.

Coup d'état

Dolzaev had previously been responsible for a massacre in St. Petersburg, Russia in 2015, and a terror spree in Georgia in 2017. His major arms supplier had been Desperado Enforcement LLC. Believing that the Abkhazian government was a puppet of Russia, he instigated a military coup in the capital Sukhumi to overthrow the cabinet and 'liberate' the state. The president and most of his cabinet had been wiped out by the coup, with most of the loyal military and the surviving cabinet scattering. Although most of the city had been evacuated, several of them had been scattered. The surviving parliamentary government, unable to combat the occupying force at their current level, responded by hiring the PMC Maverick Security Consulting, Inc. to drive the occupying forces out and return the government to the true leadership. Maverick, having been ambushed by Desperado in a mission in Africa three weeks earlier, forcing them

to fail their mission, as well as one of their agents, Raiden, who seriously injured from the attack, was more than willing to aid them.



Deceptions within

A member of the Desperado unit occupying Abkhazia, Khamsin, was ordered by Mistral to take the IF prototype LQ-84i, and also offered to educate the LQ-84i in terms of freedom when learning it wasn't knowledgeable on the concept. Mistral, however, was intending to betray him when she arrived.

LQ-84i's rebellion

A day later, Mistral and the LQ-84i arrived at Abkhazia. The LQ-84i was ordered to stay close to her, although Mistral, planning on betraying Khamsin, ordered for it to scout ahead in case PMCs arrived to retake Abkhazia, and also released its range inhibitor to subtly manipulating it to wander about (knowing it desired freedom), then notifying the Desperado forces that the LQ-84i had gone AWOL. The LQ-84i then proceeded to cut through numerous Desperado cyborgs (including all of the heavy cyborgs), several Gekko, as well as all the Fenrirs, Grads, and Mastiffs. Upon being blocked by an electromagnetic barricade, the LQ-84i deduced from Mistral's taunts that it should ambush a soldier with the clearance to shut down the barrier blocking him from the main city.

The Hot Wind Blowing

Just after getting out of the Civic Hall, he was then ambushed by Khamsin, who proceeded to fight it, citing its lack of knowledge of freedom making it unlikely for the LQ-84i to escape, and arrogantly believing that he would defeat it. After a grueling battle, the LQ-84i then proceeded to shatter the unit, as well as kill Khamsin via his chainsaw, throwing his torso out of the now devastated battle mech. Khamsin then proceeded to curse at the LQ-84i for not trying to liberate Abkhazia, its mission before passing away, also blowing up afterwards from his self-destruct protocol going off, while the LQ-84i reflected joyously that it was almost free.

Mistral, however, revealed herself, and then proceeded to reactivate the range inhibitor via her Codec. The LQ-84i then realized that Mistral had deceived him, and then was forced to shake the hand of a Humanoid Dwarf Gekko at her command. Mistral then stated that she would make up a cover story for Khamsin's death during the debriefing. The LQ-84i then asked why she did this, but Mistral informed it that, as a machine only understanding 'logic and reason', it 'would never understand.'

Maverick's Arrival

Maverick, via a MQ-133C prototype unmanned aircraft, had Raiden delivered within close proximity to Sukhumi. After briefly reviewing the briefing materials (again, as Raiden noted to Kevin Washington) on their mission (having had time because the occupied military bases hadn't scrambled interceptors yet), as well as being briefed on the functions of his new body by Doktor, Raiden was then inserted via an onboard catapult device to the shoreline. Maverick chose this method because a direct insertion via landing was impossible due to both the occupation and the aircraft itself lacking either stealth camouflage or OctoCamo.

After making his way to the entrance of the old city of Sukhumi via the Civic Hall, Raiden was ambushed by a trio of Desperado cyborgs via stealth camouflage. However, Raiden, having previously undergone upgrades to his cyborg body due in part to the ambush three weeks earlier, effortlessly defeated them. Upon absorbing their electrolytes, Raiden mentioned that the intel was not exaggerating regarding the amount of cyborgs in Abkhazia. Kevin and Courtney Collins then informed Raiden about how PMCs were off the ethical radar, thus technically not within the law, and could use cyborgs. The group nonetheless wondered how Desperado would have that many cyborgs under their employ. Raiden, however, didn't mind the amount, as he viewed them as

walking vending machines to power his suit. Raiden also held contempt for the Desperado members due to choosing their trade in terrorizing civilians, and compared himself to the reaper. Kevin then noted that even given Raiden's usual personality, his remark was cold, before allowing Raiden to continue with his mission. Upon entering the main gate, he learned from Boris that Dolzaev and Mistral were located at a coastal refinery at the edge of the city, based on satellite imagery. He then proceeded through the city, also wiping out any cyborgs or unmanned gears that crossed his path.

Advancing through Sukhumi

Eventually, he was ambushed by the unmanned gear interface prototype LQ-84i, who had been sent by Desperado to assassinate Raiden due to being told that if it disobeyed a direct order, its memory and AI would be wiped. Raiden eventually subdued and destroyed the weapon after a grueling fight. Before permanently shutting down, the LQ-84i contacted Raiden via codec and told Raiden about its desires to obey its directives of ensuring freedom for Abkhazia, and lamenting that freedom hadn't been defined. Raiden then expressed some bemusement that an AI would actually care about freedom.

Skirmishes in the old city

Raiden then proceeded to the bridge area, although he was ambushed by Hammerhead aerial unmanned gears. He ran across the bridge avoiding both missiles and the collapsing debris. Midway through, part of the bridge gave way, nearly sending him down into the river, but he grabbed on and stopped himself inches before falling into the water, and then proceeded to run back up. He then continued to run before making it to the other side. He then proceeded to defeat one of the Hammerheads. He then proceeded to wipe out several Desperado cyborgs, some of which were also utilizing Slider unmanned gears. He then made it to the immediate premises of the plant, although it was locked to the extent that only a cyborg of high rank would be allowed access to the gate. He then had to search for a Desperado platoon commander's arm, under Kevin and Doktor's suggestion. Afterwards, he managed to access the gate. After wiping out the opposition nearby, he then proceeded through the abandoned hotel.

Infiltrating the refinery plant

Upon arrival at the outskirts of the city, within close proximity to the plant, he scouted the plant's structure, finding several cyborgs, as well as Mistral and Andrey Dolzaev, although he could not immediately identify the former. Mistral and Dolzaev had a brief argument, before the former dismissed the latter. Afterwards, Mistral turned towards Raiden's direction and blew a kiss at him. Raiden then proceeded to tense up and go into defense mode, causing Doktor some concern due to his increased heartrate. When refocusing his attention on Mistral, he found she had gone the split second Doktor called him. He then remarked that he had 'dodged a bullet.' He then proceeded through the outskirts, and also proceeded to take out several Desperado soldiers and Gekko. After getting through a locked gate, he managed to find the plant. The plant itself was built in 2016, and had a cliffside separating it. However, a fence was nearby, which allowed for Raiden to cut through it. Upon entry, however, Raiden was ambushed by Dwarf Gekko and cyborgs. He wiped them out, then entered the plant. He also avoided several infrared sensors and also destroyed any gun cameras that could potentially spot him. Afterwards, he reached the plant's top level.

The final takedown

Upon reaching the top, Raiden encountered Mistral. She first relayed her past as a former child soldier in the Algerian Civil War as well as how she had been orphaned. However, she then explained that she ‘butchered’ those who killed her parents, and decided to participate in wars in Afghanistan and Iraq, before eventually being given a cause to fight for by a man. Raiden inquired who the man was, but she ignored him. Raiden also claimed that his ideal worth fighting for was protecting the weak. Mistral scoffed at the idea before having the Dwarf Gekko supply their arms to form her armor and pole-arm weapon, L'Etranger. She then proceeded to fight Raiden from the rooftops to the pipes, before eventually descending to the ground level. Mistral then struck a liquid nitrogen container. Raiden then sliced the container, dousing Mistral in liquid nitrogen, freezing her on the spot, before finishing her off.

Dolzaev's final act

Prior to her death, Mistral contacted Dolzaev, apologizing for her failure, and telling him to live strong. She then said ‘I love you ... with all my heart’ in French to an unidentified person. Dolzaev was confused by her words, before Raiden, taking the deceased Mistral's radio, told him that her last words were not directed towards Dolzaev. Dolzaev reacted angrily to Raiden for his role in killing Mistral, before Raiden reminded Dolzaev of the deaths he had caused before demanding that his surrender. Dolzaev then laughed, saying a derogatory phrase in Abkhaz. Raiden then requested Dolzaev translate what he said. Dolzaev then said he would not surrender, as ‘we are exactly where I want’. Raiden then realized from Dolzaev's choice of a reply that the terrorist was most likely going to kill himself by attempting to blow something up. Before Dolzaev ultimately blew himself up along with his target, a power pylon, he gave a speech regarding how the plant was built with Russian money to make Russian money, and was ultimately a prison for the Abkhaz, before declaring that with his death, Abkhazia would be free. He then pressed the detonator, consuming himself and the pylon in a massive explosion that forced Raiden back into a wall. Boris then demanded to know what happened, before Raiden informed him of Dolzaev's suicide. Boris then told Raiden to locate a landing zone, as Maverick had sent a helicopter to extract him. Raiden confirmed the order while watching the fiery remains of the pylon.



Aftermath

The terrorist threat was ultimately quelled, and despite Dolzaev's suicide, the only thing negatively impacted was the plant being out of commission for a few months, with Russia spending some of its national funds to repair the plant. Maverick also wasn't held accountable for their failure to prevent Dolzaev's final actions, which they speculated could not be stopped unless they had cybernetically-enhanced snipers in position. Maverick later proceeded with a new mission, this time to investigate the Guadalajara sewers in Mexico regarding Desperado's involvement in a rumored research lab in the area, which they had signed up for late into the coup when requested by one of the NGOs that was a frequent client of Maverick.

The LQ-84i, rebuilt as the Blade Wolf under Raiden's request, later relayed to Sunny Emmerich what it had done prior to working with Raiden.

Investigation at Guadalajara

An Investigation at Guadalajara was conducted by Maverick in response to rumors of human trafficking linking to a Desperado research lab in Mexico.

Prelude

At some point in 2018, reports in Mexico indicated that a research lab, rumored to be owned by Desperado, had circulated, especially after toxic waste was dumped in the sewers of Guadalajara. A human rights NGO had been investigating reports of human trafficking and learned that street kids were being taken to a research lab owned by Desperado. Due to the presence of a PMC, the NGO requested Maverick's assistance to investigate further. Maverick, having already taken care of the Abkhazian Coup, deployed Raiden to investigate the lab for any evidence implicating Desperado in the alleged human trafficking activities.

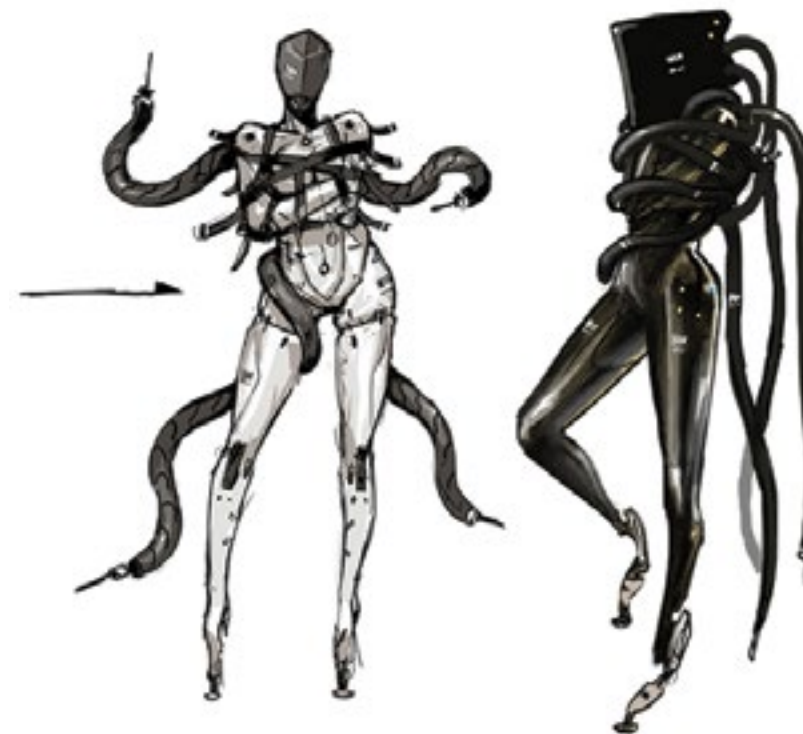
Guadalajara Sewers

Raiden, upon arriving at the border, purchased a disguise to blend in with the civilians so he wouldn't stick out, although he ended up being tricked by the salesman into wearing a mariachi costume. Upon arriving at Guadalajara, Raiden also revealed that he brought Blade Wolf along in order to throw the newly reconstructed AI UG 'a bone.' Upon arriving at the insertion point, he entered the sewer system, although not before being spotted by two locals who witnessed the entire thing due to mistaking him for a Mariachi singer, although they decided to forget they ever witnessed it.

Afterwards, Kevin briefed them about trying to locate the lab in the sewer, and also warned him about locals commenting about 'black crocodiles' living in the sewers. Blade Wolf then proceeded to scout ahead of Raiden, also informing Raiden of there being UGs patrolling the area shortly thereafter. Raiden then ended up ambushed by a Mastiff humanoid UG, forcing him to destroy it before it could alert his presence to the other UGs nearby. Afterwards, Blade Wolf reported the presence of catwalks for Raiden to avoid UG patrols if necessary. Afterwards, Raiden entered another area of the sewers before Blade Wolf reported the presence of a boy in the sewers. Fighting his way through numerous Dwarf Gekko, Raiden found the boy being attacked by two Dwarf Gekko. He flung at dagger at one and stabbed the other before finding himself facing

off against three Raptor UGs. After defeating them all, the boy came out of hiding and revealed himself to be George, reminding Raiden of his foster father. Having learned that George escaped from the lab, and that the lab intended to remove organs from the kids they captured, Raiden headed for the lab while calling for Maverick agents to pick up George.

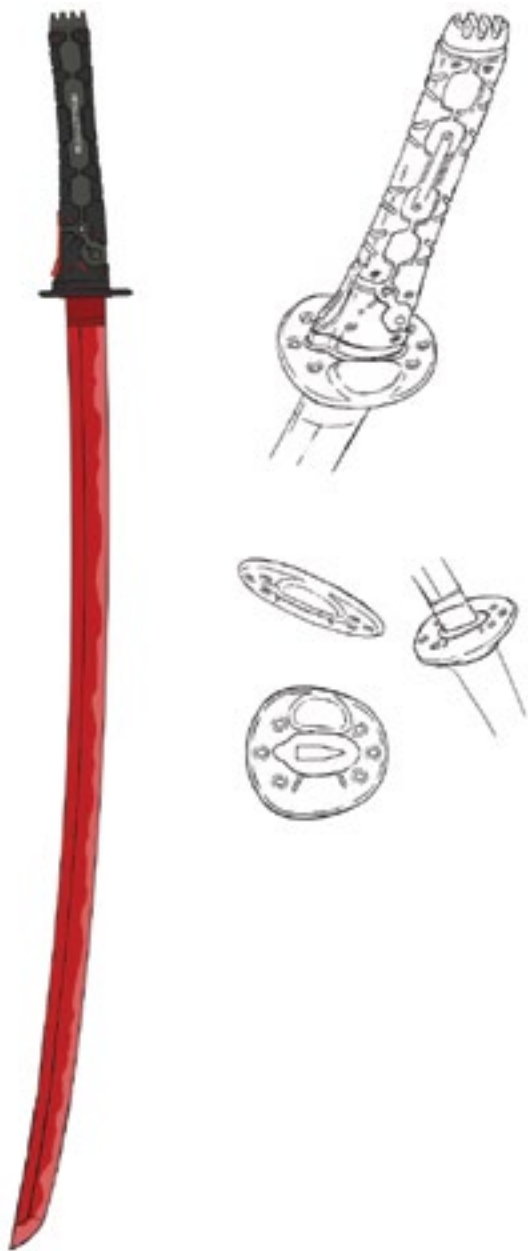
With a lot of UGs patrolling the sewers as he got closer to the lab, Raiden retrieved a cardboard box to hide from them, with Kevin expressing some surprise. Infiltrating his way through more Mastiffs and Vodomerkas (aka Water Striders), he found the lab entrance that was camouflaged.



A startling find

Now inside the lab, Doktor advised Raiden to use a Dwarf Gekko to access the data terminal so that maverick will know what Desperado has been up to. However he had to fight off some Desperado security, prompting Kevin to sarcastically remark that stealth was Raiden's specialty. Afterwards he entered a room that to his shock was full of cyborg brain casings. After fighting off more Desperado security in the same room before entering the brains room, Raiden contacted Maverick about his findings. Although thankfully the cyborgs Raiden encountered were not children due to their telltale approach to combat, he was still unnerved that Desperado was trafficking children for their own purposes as well as for profit.

Raiden next found a Dwarf Gekko and had it reprogrammed for him to control. Avoiding the cyborgs, or otherwise sneaking up from behind and shocking them, Raiden controlled it to a data terminal that would otherwise have been out of reach for him. Hacking into the system, Doktor found a video from one of the sentries with a Desperado exec on site yesterday. The video showed Sundowner as well as a man in a suit talking with the chief scientist about the children's VR training program. Sundowner noted that it was the same one that 'ol' Georgy-boy' used on the kids in Liberia and that they need to ship the brains out before Desperado's cover was blown. The scientist objected that each brain has their own



characteristics and the procedure is not quite simple. The man in the suit relented but ordered what they had shipped out, the lab be destroyed and the children not yet processed disposed of. He also mentioned that Accounting would be in touch with the scientist regarding payment. As the man and Sundowner left the lab, he also mentioned that Tecumseh was very demanding and that America suffered long enough. When the video ended Raiden relayed everything to Maverick so they can inform their NGO client what was happening. He also had Kevin find out who the man in the suit was, who seemed familiar to Kevin. In the meantime Raiden headed off to rescue the children that were not yet operated on.

Desperado's backers identified

However there was more bad news to come. Courtney called Raiden to inform him that George was nowhere to be found. Hoping that Desperado had not gotten to him first, Raiden proceeded further but found a Grad UG blocking the way. After a fierce fight the Grad was destroyed. Kevin later called him and said the man in the suit was Colorado Senator Steven Armstrong, a presidential candidate for the 2020 elections who was once investigated by a grand jury for being tied to World Marshal Inc., the largest PMC on the planet after the splintering of the Big Five. It was also

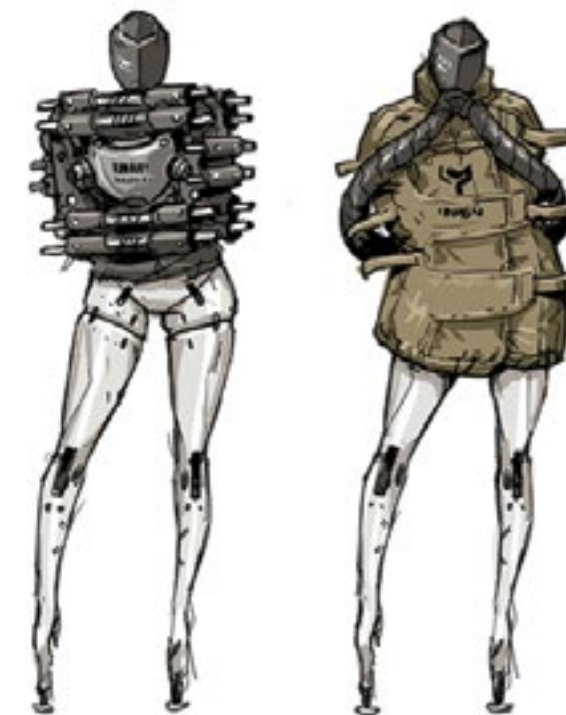
found that World Marshal had the largest R&D in cyborg development, which explained where Desperado got their cyborgs from. When Raiden proposed making the story of Marshal and Desperado in bed together go public, Kevin and Boris did not agree, stating that World Marshal had heavy influence over the media and that legally challenging them would be suicide.

Return of the Ripper

Raiden fought his way through the three cyborg sentries to the lab. Once inside he found some machines which Doktor explained would freeze the organs or the children's bodies to keep it alive. In another room he found the children behind a glass barrier. It was then that the chief scientist confronted Raiden holding George hostage at gunpoint. At the same time chloroform gas seeped into the lab room where the children were held. The scientist gave Raiden a choice to surrender or save either the children or George. George however implored Raiden to forget about him and take out the both of them. Raiden, enraged at the scientist's demeanor, asked George if he was sure. When George affirmed his statement, Raiden mercilessly walks towards the scientist. In the latter's fear, George temporarily overpowered him and Raiden cut them down before the scientist could kill the boy.

Aftermath

Raiden later implored Doktor to save George, while also taking care of the other children as well as the brains that already commenced their VR training because the human rights NGO could not care for them all. In the meantime, Maverick could not take a direct or legal action against World Marshal, who had too much media, political and military influence in the U.S.



Raid at Denver

A Raid at Denver was conducted by resigned Maverick agent Raiden against World Marshal HQ after the discovery that Desperado and World Marshal abducted children and placed their brains into cyborgs with the intention of mass-producing Jack the Ripper.

Prelude

A Maverick investigation in Mexico uncovered a gruesome discovery; Desperado had abducted street kids to harvest their brains. These brains would then be encased and take part in the Sears Program to replicate Solidus Snake’s training program in during the Liberian Civil War. The brains would then be shipped to World Marshal’s HQ in Denver, Colorado to complete their VR training, so that upon completion the children would become cybernetic soldiers for the upcoming ‘war on terror’. Because World Marshal had a huge influence over the United States military, economy and media, Maverick could not take legal or direct action against them. Knowing this, Raiden abruptly resigned from Maverick and traveled to Denver to rescue the brains inside World Marshal.

Defeating the police

Raiden and Blade Wolf entered Denver by car. Receiving a call from George, Raiden was glad to see that the boy was well but cannot take him on his raid on World Marshal. As Raiden thought about his momentary lapse into his split persona in Mexico, he was suddenly pursued by the Denver police. The chase also resulted in the stopping of at least one car and destruction of a fire hydrant, causing one of the passengers to curse at Raiden. Eventually the car was destroyed by an RPG fired by one of the cyborg police, flipping the car along with the occupants over a police barricade. While Blade Wolf scouted ahead, Raiden eliminated the cyborg police officers, including their commander, Zachary. Afterwards, Blade Wolf heeded Raiden to follow him through to a building, though not before Raiden had to defeat two Grad UGs and more officers by the entrance. When Raiden entered the building, Boris contacted him by Codec asking if he really had to do this. Raiden responded that PMCs should bend the law to save innocent lives instead of when it suits business, and that he does not want World Marshal to train the kids to become child soldiers or ‘Jack the Rippers’. Boris decided to unofficially support Raiden but increased their Codec encryption so as to not allow other parties to learn of Maverick’s involvement. After defeating more cyborgs and UGs, Blade Wolf advised Raiden to head to the rooftops to avoid minimal fighting.

Skirmishes above and below

While in an elevator, Doktor contacted Raiden telling that the brains from Mexico are safe in his care and that he hired contractors to help transport the brains out of World Marshal HQ. Doktor would also help out Raiden in his helicopter to monitor World Marshal’s (very poor) security procedures as well as Raiden’s personal safety. After fighting more cyborgs and saving a civilian from being executed, Raiden came towards the elevator with Blade Wolf informing him that he was unable to proceed further via the rooftops. Raiden took the fast route down via the elevator to an abandoned underground railway. After sneaking through the rail tunnels past the Mastiff UGs patrolling the tunnels, Raiden returned to the surface and followed Blade Wolf’s markers to World Marshal. Taking a shortcut via the stairs to the PMC HQ and fighting his way through, he is confronted by holographic images of Jetstream Sam.



What do I fight for?

Sam asked if Raiden’s way of fighting Desperado was the right thing to do to. Raiden responded that he protects the weak from people like Desperado. His rival points out while the enemy cyborgs knew what they signed up for, they did so of their own free will so as to provide for their family. To psychologically weaken Raiden, Sam turned off the emotion-suppressed nanomachines for Raiden to hear the inner thoughts of despairing cyborgs as two cyborg police officers arrived to kill Raiden. Raiden went on the defensive, unable to counter as he listened until they managed to hit him. Raiden fought back to end their thoughts and ultimately killed them. Seeing him unsettled, Blade Wolf met up with him and revealed his affiliation with Sam. Wolf advised Raiden to avoid combat while he went ahead to scout World Marshal HQ. Avoiding the cyborgs, Raiden approached the vicinity of World Marshal HQ. At the main entrance he tried to fend off three Desperado cyborgs as he listened to their inner thoughts. Sam later arrived in person, reiterating that Raiden’s cause is not so black-and-white as it initially seemed.

The Stains of Time

As Raiden collapsed from mental exhaustion, another voice joins the conversation, revealed to be Monsoon – another member of the Winds of Destruction. Monsoon explained his philosophy of ‘kill or be killed’ from his days in the Khmer Rogue regime in Cambodia, to justify his methods of setting up the cyborgs as human shields, with war as a cruel parent. Monsoon also explained war as a meme, also using Raiden’s belief that his sword was a tool as another example of an ‘exquisite’ meme.

Up to this point Raiden had this belief to keep his split persona ‘in check’ but knowing that he was just born to kill, he pronounced that ‘Jack is back’. Monsoon initially thought he lost his mind and ordered the three cyborgs to kill Raiden. Ordering Doktor to turn off his pain inhibitors, Raiden unleashed his ‘Ripper’ mode and easily sliced the three cyborgs in half. Raiden immediately asked who would be next – Monsoon or Sam. Sam opted to fight but Monsoon ordered him to report to ‘the chief’. Sam left, leaving Monsoon and Jack the Ripper to get acquainted. Monsoon’s ability to split his body and ninjustu techniques for confusion did cause some trouble for Raiden. At times Monsoon used his sai weapons to magnetically lift armored vehicles into the air and hurl them at Raiden, forcing him to use Blade Mode to cut down the heavy objects. Monsoon even spun a large group of vehicles and UGs to crush Raiden. Eventually Monsoon

levitated World Marshal’s obelisk statue in an attempt to put Raiden under. Instead, Raiden jumped onto the obelisk, ran its length and jumped up once more to kick Monsoon halfway through into the building. With Monsoon trapped, Raiden cut him down and sliced his head off Monsoon’s destroyed body. Monsoon later called Raiden to relay his last words, passing a meme on to the latter. Raiden regained control of himself, reassuring a cautious and somewhat scared Kevin that he did not want this to happen again. Raiden then proceeded to rescue the brains inside World Marshal.



Hostile Takeover

When Raiden entered the lobby of World Marshal HQ, he was greeted by the voice of Sundowner, who was impressed that he killed Monsoon. He also revealed that the brains were in the server room and told Raiden to come up and ‘go nuts’. Afterwards Raiden fought with some of World Marshal’s cyborgs and two Fenrir UGs. He later found the elevators, which Doktor revealed that they were offline as it should have been expected. Blade Wolf offered to hack into the building’s data access terminal for Doktor to hack an elevator to work. However Raiden was forced to fend off the cyborgs, Sliders, and Mastiffs storming into the lobby by pilfering RPGs from their wall mounted displays as well commandeering two mounted gatling gun turrets. After some time passed, Doktor managed to hack into an elevator and Raiden hurried inside it before more cyborgs arrived. Alternatively, players could drag the fight out longer, with Raiden eventually having to fight a Grad UG which crashes through the front of the building. This would unlock a secret ranked battle in the level and increase the player’s score.

Heavy opposition

Doktor told Raiden that the elevator could only go as far up to the 20th floor, as all the other floors above it could not be accessed because they were closed to the public. The only way up was to pass through a high security door which even cyborgs with security clearances could not pass through. Instead of finding another left hand, Raiden had to find and destroy three electrical panels scattered around the offices on the 20th floor. As he did so he also had to eliminate the patrolling cyborgs and Raptor reinforcements. After eliminating the last electrical panel and a hammer-wielding cyborg at the high-security door, Raiden entered a new area and firmly told Doktor to not activate his pain inhibitors, believing he could control his inner ‘Jack the Ripper’ persona and mitigate any wanton carnage it would otherwise cause.

Raiden was immediately greeted with a large number of cyborgs in the room as well as Sliders attacking through the windows. At Boris’s suggestion, Raiden instead ran past the opposition through the hallways, jumping or sliding over falling debris, evading gunfire and even climbed a couple of floors after the ceilings collapsed. Eventually his way through was blocked by a Grad UG and fought with it. After destroying it, Raiden utilised the sliders outside as aerial platforms to climb upwards, destroying them before gaining a foothold on the side of the building and sprinting up the side of the HQ, dodging missiles fired from

Hammerheads and rooftop snipers and falling debris. Eventually he leapt into a hole blasted in the wall before it was closed off by falling debris, now higher up than Blade Wolf in a short space of time, with the latter having 'fallen behind'.

Elevator fights

Although getting closer to the server room, Raiden still had some ways to go. After passing through a Japanese-style garden inside the building and evading the patrolling cyborgs, Blade Wolf called to reconfirm Raiden's motives for saving the brains. Despite Raiden's split persona and his actions, Blade Wolf continued to help him in his endeavor. Doktor also told him the only way to the server room is to take a freight platform. After eliminating the guards, Raiden proceeded upwards on the platform. However more cyborgs and UGs accosted him. At some point another freight platform was going up but at a slower speed. Two cyborgs destroyed the fuel tank with RPGs, meaning the platform Raiden was on would soon crumble. Raiden eliminated the RPG cyborgs as well as the Dwarf Gekko that were attempting to slow down the crumbling platform. He managed to get onto the second platform before the crumbling one gave way.

After defeating the last of the cyborg and Mastiff guards at the top floor, Raiden proceeded to the server room. However there was one more room before it. Raiden entered that room before encountering, to his initial shock, what appeared to be a very much alive Mistral. However it turned out to be a body double who fought using Mistral's tactics but was AI controlled, meaning that Raiden would have an easier time to destroy it. He also defeated a body double of Monsoon after Mistral's doppelganger was destroyed. Looking at this scenario as a player, one could assume that this was an attempt by the developers to incorporate a mid-story boss rush.



Red Sun

Raiden finally entered the server room, and was immediately confronted by Sundowner. He explained how the Sears Program was being transferred straight to the childrens' brains through VR, instead of the on-field training they would otherwise had to undergo, and how kids can be molded to fight wars as soldiers. Sundowner also viewed that the Patriots only managed the war economy instead of inventing it but none of this would matter in three hours where an event would occur that would rival the September 11 attacks. Rather than fight right there and risk 'damaging the merchandise', Sundowner led Raiden to World Marshal's heliport on the roof and proceeded to start their fight.

In addition to his Bloodlust weapon, he also had a set of six shields which would explode upon impact with Raiden's sword and cause him injury. Nevertheless Raiden managed to disarm Sundowner from his shields via wrenching or slicing them apart and then lopping of the arms that attached them to Sundowner's body. Sundowner was then forced to take the offensive which included: combining his two 'Bloodlust' blades into their pincer form, 'acquiring' a heavy floodlight pole for use as a bludgeoning weapon, and calling multiple Hammerhead choppers to fire repeated volleys at Raiden. Eventually Raiden bested Sundowner, but instead of falling off the heliport, the latter hung on to another Hammerhead just below and fired missiles at

Raiden, forcing him off the roof and sending him falling back down to the city streets. However Raiden spotted a Slider and took control of it by impaling its 'brain' with his sword. Steering it back into the HQ building, Raiden flew upwards back towards the roof and while avoiding loose debris and structural obstacles. After slicing through the ceiling, he burst through the roof and flew towards Sundowner. He fired three more missiles at Raiden but ended up missing. Raiden then flung the Slider at the Hammerhead and caused it to explode, much to Sundowner's surprise. Sundowner fell away from the blast and into Raiden's blade to be hacked to bits. With that, Sundowner was slain and the Winds of Destruction were blown away.

In a Codec communication, Sundowner congratulated Raiden for killing him and informed him that in three hours, Senator Armstrong would launch Operation Tecumseh to create a world where PMC's would once again be in high demand. Sundowner also contacted Sam telling him that he would 'get (his) wish' to fight Raiden in a one on one duel. Sundowner's body self destructed after this, with Raiden contacting his one time support staff from Maverick. After Raiden told Doktor that World Marshal HQ was secure to pick up the brains, he discussed with Boris and Kevin where Tecumseh would take place since Raiden could not prevent it, even if he moved at speeds of Mach 2. Deducing that it would not be happening on US soil, Raiden realised that it would likely happen in Pakistan, where US President Hamilton was due to land for talks

with Pakistani leader Farooq Salaam. The assassination of Hamilton in an unstable region like Pakistan would trigger a second war on terror and reignite the war economy. Courtney later suggested an RLV craft, one that could reach Mach 23 speeds if it was travelling in the exosphere and would make it to Pakistan in under half an hour. Deciding that this was the best course of action, Raiden got Boris to contact Solis while he worked with Doktor to retrieve the brains from the server room.

Escape from Denver

With Monsoon and Sundowner dead, and World Marshal open for Doktor to collect the brains and get them to safety, Raiden's mission in Denver was done. However he needed to escape and get to Solis' launch base. When Doktor picked up Raiden via helicopter they were then pursued by two unmanned MQ-320s sent from Peterson Air Force Base. Raiden and Doktor worked together to destroy them but when Raiden attempted to get back to the helicopter, he fell back down to Denver. Doktor was forced to flee from World Marshal cyborgs firing anti-air missiles and assumed Raiden had died.

Moving out

Raiden had in fact survived and Boris contacted him and told him to escape Denver. At that moment World Marshal cyborgs came to try and kill Raiden but Raiden defeated them with little effort. Doktor then contacted Raiden with the latter informing him he will find transport to get to Solis. After stealthily avoiding three Gekko UGs he was ambushed by more World Marshal cyborgs with Raiden killing them all. After avoiding a Gekko patrol along with a multitude of Dwarf Gekkos and destroying two Raptors, Raiden continued his escape.

Boris then contacted Raiden and told him of a route with minimal security and added it to Raiden's Soliton Radar. After killing three cyborgs and destroying a Grad (saving an ungrateful civilian in the process), Raiden was then contacted by Blade Wolf, who was with Doktor on the helicopter and said that it would meet Raiden at Solis. After killing a Mastiff and World Marshal cyborgs Raiden noticed an enemy cyborg on his Soliton Radar coming out of a building. After killing the cyborg, Raiden investigated further to only be ambushed by three Mastiffs. Although startled by the ambush Raiden managed to destroy them before escaping.

Once Raiden has got past the barrier Boris contacted Raiden and asked him if he has escaped the enemy cyborgs, with Raiden confirming he had. At that moment Raiden

saw a motorbike which he commandeered but not before carving a message on the pavement: 'I need your bike. Thank you for your cooperation' with Raiden unaware that the bike belonged to Sam.



Duel at the Badlands

Two hours later, Raiden made his way to Solis. Doktor informed him that he managed to escape from Colorado airspace and World Marshal cyborgs. Raiden stops when he sees Sam and Blade Wolf in the middle of the road, when Blade Wolf returns to Raiden he tells him he has 'analyzed Sam's words and action to find out his motivation to no avail'. Raiden 'thanks' Sam for not murdering everyone at Solis. Sam replies saying that the results of the war are the payoff, with Raiden assuming that the issue is money and profits for World Marshal. Sam retorts that the real issue is a matter of ideals, and decides to 'let history decide who

is right'. Raiden, knowing he means the victor of the duel, motions to the side of the road. Raiden gets off of Sam's bike, although Sam, probably not caring, doesn't say anything. As they walk to the place of battle, Raiden said that he did not care who was right or wrong, and that it only mattered that he had a reason to kill Sam. Sam only responded with a satisfactory laugh. Blade Wolf questioned their reason for fighting, and noticed that there were also various cyborg-related medical supplies nearby, in large part because of a World Marshal chopper crashing earlier.

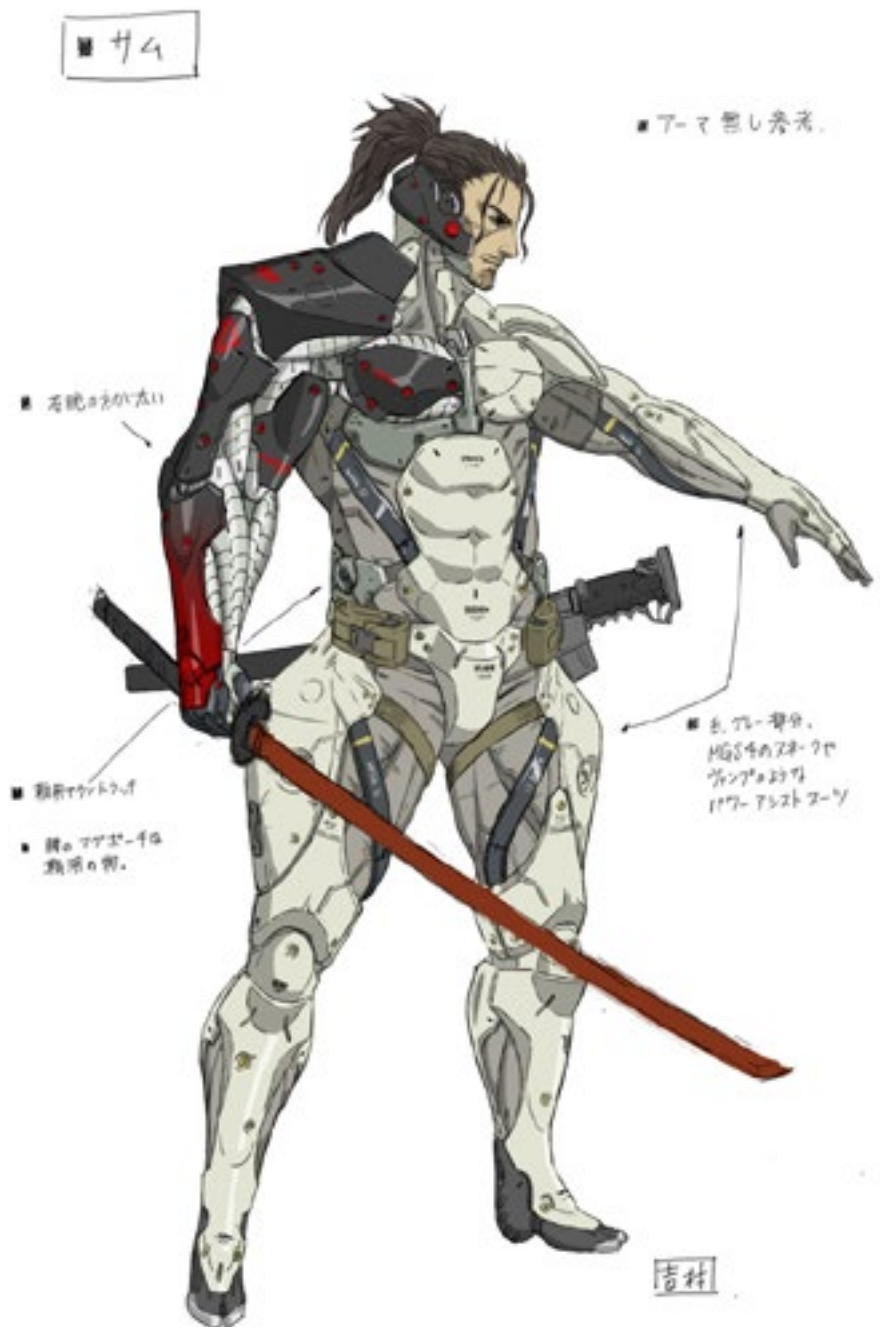
After a short but intense duel, Raiden managed to leave Sam open to an attack and stabs him through the gut, much like he would do to Senator Armstrong later. Sam then fell to his knees, laughs at his defeat, and winks at Blade Wolf just before he succumbs to his injury. Looking at the gash in his torso, Raiden notices that Sam barely had cyborg enhancements, with Blade Wolf questioning the necessity of Sam's death. Blade Wolf is forced to accept that there was no logical reason for Raiden to kill Sam. Raiden responds by telling him to 'figure it out' on his own. Sam's high-frequency blade was ID locked and thus, Raiden is unable to use it to its full potential (i.e. he can unsheathe the sword, but he is unable to activate the part that makes the blade vibrate at a high frequency, which gives it its cutting power). After Raiden respectfully wipes the blood off the blade and sheathes it, Blade Wolf retains it in Sam's memory. Boris then reminded Raiden that they only have less than one hour, so Raiden and Blade Wolf make their way to Solis.

Operation Tecumseh

Operation Tecumseh was a false-flag operation planned by Colorado Senator and 2020 Presidential candidate Steven Armstrong to ensure the revitalization of the war economy, which would have ensured his election and then reorganize America to fit Objectivist views.

Origin of the name

The operation was initially planned since at least 2016. The name ‘Tecumseh’ was a bit of a tongue-in-cheek to refer to a Native American chief named Tecumseh who laid a curse on the U.S. presidency. Every 20 years, a U.S. President would die before their terms had ended. This had been the case from 1840 to 1960. However, since 1980, with the exception of James Johnson in 2009, no American President had died.

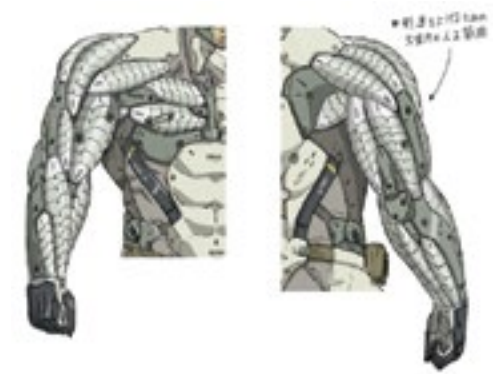


Early Desperado activities

In 2018, Senator Steven Armstrong, after inspecting the Desperado research facility’s progress of the brain surgeries, had the Desperado researcher terminate the children with the promise of doing the wire transfer of his payment fee, as he had anticipated that an investigation of the facility was inevitable, and he also needed to focus on achieving the mission, referring to it as ‘a harsh mistress’. A day later, Raiden discovered from Sundowner after defeating him that the event, was to occur within three hours and would ensure new PMC contracts since 9/11. Not even at Mach 2 speeds could Raiden prevent this from happening. Raiden and Maverick deduced that ‘Operation Tecumseh’ involved President Hamilton’s visit to the Shabhzabad region of Pakistan, and assassinate the President while making it seem as though Jihadi rebels were responsible for the assassination. Courtney Collins then supplied a solution to getting to Pakistan: using a Mach 23 RLV, which would allow for only half an hour of travel between America and Pakistan. Raiden then contacted Solis, which had it ready by the time Raiden arrived at the main launch pad.

Stopping the operation

Less than half an hour to go, Raiden arrived in close vicinity to the Shabhzabad Air Base, which Maverick deduced was the targeted base due to it being the only sufficiently large base in the region for a presidential visit. Raiden took out several World Marshal soldiers stationed outside of the base’s main gate. Both Raiden and Courtney then noticed that the World Marshal group stationed there had the same XIFF code as Desperado (‘unaffiliated’), causing them to deduce that World Marshal was most likely going to frame Desperado for the attack as well. Raiden then rushed to the air control tower to cause as much destruction as possible to its equipment in order to re-route the plane to save the president. However, by the time he passed through the hangar, Raiden lost contact with Blade Wolf, who had scouted ahead earlier. He then arrived in the general vicinity of the tower.



A twist in the plan

Unfortunately, he also found Blade Wolf's prone and damaged body, causing him to deduce that an ambush was nearby. While scanning for potential enemies nearby, the ground underneath him gave way, forcing him to jump back to stable ground. Raiden then discovered the reason behind the unstable ground: a gigantic mech called Metal Gear EXCELSUS. Steven Armstrong, who had earlier been believed to have not be in direct participation of the event, had then stepped out of the weapon, and informed Raiden that he was too late in stopping his plan. Raiden informs him that his plan ended right then and there, although Armstrong informed him that Raiden had actually expanded his plan, and hinted that the internet was involved. Boris then called Raiden and informed him of the bad news: the photos of the attack on the base were leaked early onto various news websites, and not only that, but there are several posts indicating that the American civilians are going to be demanding for a counterattack. Raiden ended up confused, as the deaths of several soldiers, although tragic, should not be a sufficient reason for going to war, but Armstrong then explained to Raiden that it was simply the spark for reigniting the war economy to get out of the economic recession, and boldly declared that, thanks to inheriting some 'isms' from the Patriots, that all Americans are now 'Sons of the Patriots.' He also informed Raiden that he'd have to kill him, as he'll just 'get in the way of the message' before reboarding EXCELSUS.

Collective Consciousness

Raiden then proceeded to fight EXCELSUS, destroying its front legs and then throwing it onto stable ground before going into a swordfight with EXCELSUS via one of the mech's sword arms, before impaling and cutting up its head, reaching the top of the mech. Afterwards, Armstrong confronted Raiden at the top. Deciding he had little time left, Armstrong then powered up via Excelsus' wiring, surprising and causing annoyance with Raiden. Excelsus then collapsed down onto the ground.

Armstrong then proceeded to fight Raiden himself, with Raiden demanding to know what Armstrong just did. Armstrong then proceeded to mention his history as a college football player (also specifying that he was one at the University of Texas when Raiden accused him of being from 'some cushy Ivy League school'), as well as commenting that he was capable of breaking President Hamilton with his own bare hands unlike the other 'Beltway pansies', before throwing Raiden up into the air and then kicking him into the side of the elevator. Raiden, shocked that Armstrong was able to significantly harm him with his normal human body, demanded to know what he was, with Armstrong then simply telling that Raiden should 'stick around and find out.' He then fought Armstrong, without his AR visor as Armstrong broke it, although Armstrong then proceeded to shatter Raiden's HF Blade, forcing Raiden to fight him unarmed. Raiden then managed to

gradually overpower Armstrong, while also accusing him of being a 'typical politician' regarding his motives, being more concerned with buying votes as well as his approval ratings, and claimed that Armstrong is 'simply another maggot crawling in the pile' if America had really gone down.

The duel between ideals

Armstrong then decided to inform him of his true motives: Although Raiden was right about his needing capital and votes, it was not because he was a typical politician. Rather: he needed them so he could remake America (which he felt in its current form was rotten to the core) to be objectivist in its ideals and have each man individually fight for his/her own beliefs, including killing and dying for them, as well as seeking to purge the weak. Raiden then regained a second wind upon learning the part about his purging the weak, and, after faking understanding of his goal, he then threw him aside and declared Armstrong to be 'bat-shit insane', explaining how Armstrong has absolutely no idea what it was like to be weak or poor, where he had to steal and even kill just to survive. Armstrong declared that Raiden did survive and took back his own life, with Raiden vowing to kill Armstrong.

"Nanomachines, son'

They then proceeded to fight hand to hand, although Raiden ultimately wasn't able to inflict serious enough damage onto Armstrong, despite two series of flurry punches after being hit hard enough to force the cyborg ninja to vomit up blood. Raiden expressed irritation at Armstrong's seeming invulnerability, causing Armstrong to explain that it was caused by nanomachines in his body that harden his body when experiencing physical trauma. Raiden then attempted to punch Armstrong, but it only proved Armstrong's earlier claim, thus leaving Raiden at Armstrong's mercy as the latter proceeded to savagely beat Raiden to a pulp with blows powerful enough to destroy EXCELSUS' frame.



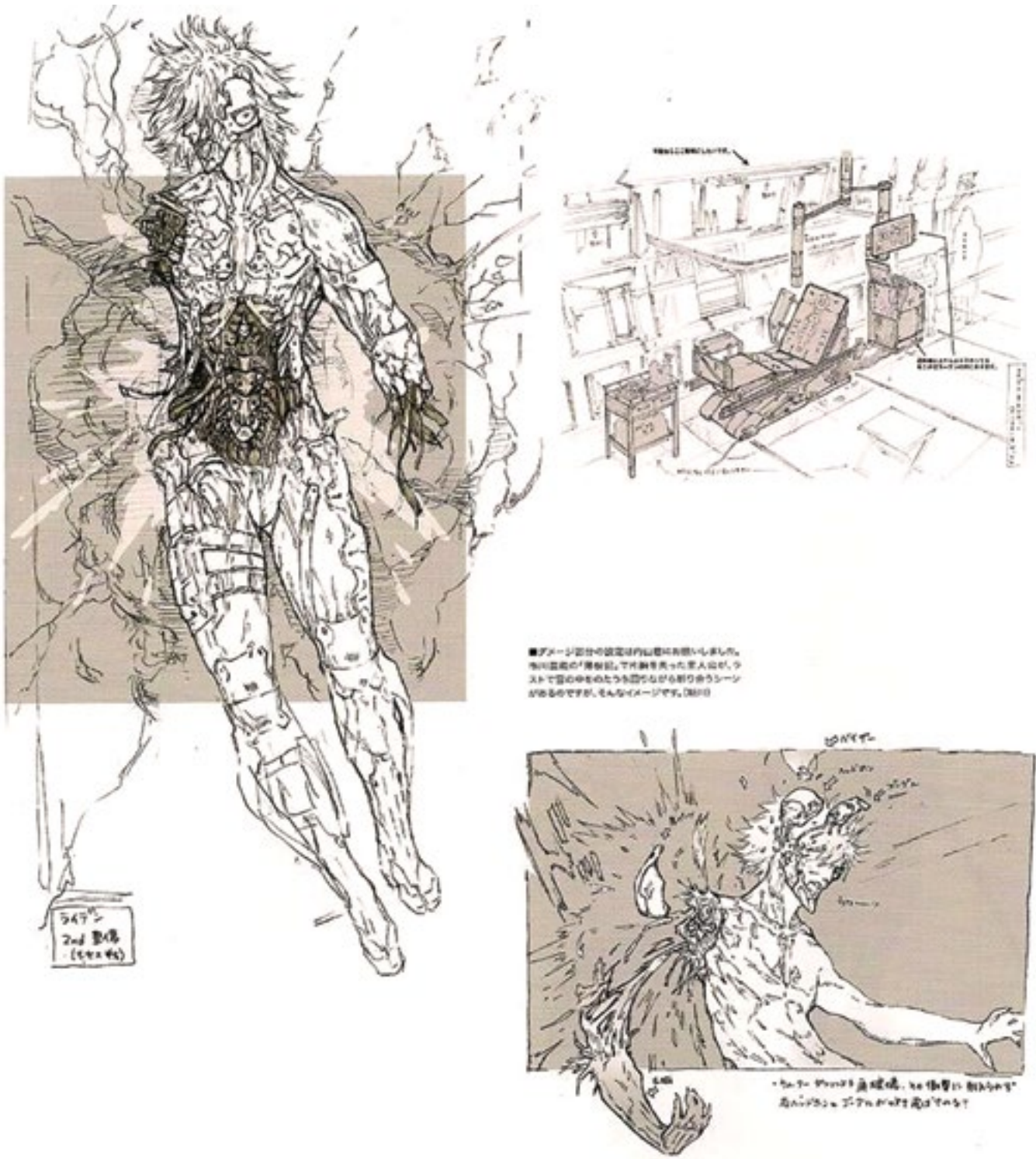
It Has to be This Way

While Raiden was being battered, Blade Wolf regained consciousness and proceeded to save Raiden by delivering Sam’s sword, as well as replaying Samuel Rodrigues’ last conversation with him before his and Raiden’s duel in the Colorado badlands. Blade Wolf then explained that initially, his parameters were to safeguard accumulated data, so although he doesn’t fear termination, his initial parameters would not allow for him to risk destroying the data. However his experiences with Raiden, as well as Raiden and Sam’s duel, had him establish his own parameters. Armstrong then angrily jumped towards Blade Wolf and kicked him away, cursing at him, although not before Blade Wolf threw Sam’s sword to Raiden (which had been unlocked after two hours had passed). Raiden then decided to use Sam’s sword in anger and to avenge Blade Wolf, both due to not being so sure whether he should follow through with his initial beliefs due to Armstrong’s actions, and also because it’s not technically his sword he’s using. He then proceeded to fight Armstrong, though the latter’s powered-up attacks made close quarter counters difficult. At some points Armstrong threw bulk pieces of the wrecked EXCELSUS at Raiden, prompting him to use Blade Mode to slice through the pieces. Raiden eventually found an opening and killed Armstrong by ripping out his nanite-laced heart and crushing it. Armstrong nonetheless imparted his last words and respect for Raiden as a kindred spirit and hinted that Raiden was his successor.

Aftermath

Despite Maverick’s best efforts, they still weren’t able to prevent the war economy from being re-established, as President Hamilton returned to Pakistan to meet with its leader Farooj to discuss a possible unified front against terrorism, although they at least prevented Armstrong from becoming president. In addition, Raiden was also viewed as a criminal due to his earlier actions. Nonetheless, Maverick, alongside, Doktor managed to establish the world’s first official cyborg firm to allow the children who had been cyberneticized to live relatively normal lives, although they still needed to do labor, which was still ultimately better than their former lives as street kids.

Raiden permanently resigned from Maverick, both officially and unofficially, to ‘fight his own war’. In addition, World Marshal also was still in existence, although financially crippled due to Raiden (literally) having killed their funding, and was put on sale.



Metal Gear: Acid

Developer	Konami Computer Entertainment Japan
Publisher	Konami
Director	Shinta Nojiri
Producer	Hideo Kojima Masahiro Hinami
Designer	Shinta Nojiri
Artist	Tsubasa Masao
Writer	Moku Tochibori Shuyo Murata Tomokazu Fukushima
Composer	Nobuko Toda Shuichi Kobori Akihiro Honda
Platform	PlayStation Portable
Release date	December 16, 2004v



This game is a **non-canonical** entry in the Metal Gear series



In 2016, a jumbo jet carrying Senator Hach, an important politician and likely future presidential candidate, is hijacked by terrorists. In exchange for the senator, the terrorists demand Pythagoras, a research project being conducted in the Moloni Republic in southern Africa, from the United States government. In efforts to identify these terrorists, the government begins an investigation of Pythagoras.

The Moloni government refuses to cooperate and work with the United States, saying that it doesn't want to interfere in its current affairs. In response, the U.S. sends in a covert special forces team to investigate, but the team is obliterated by armed resistance. With no other options and time running out, the U.S. government calls Solid Snake to infiltrate the laboratory, discover the nature of Pythagoras and to rescue Senator Hach.

2016 [Independent timeline] Lobito Island Incident

In 2016, a jumbo jet carrying Senator Viggo Hach, an important politician and likely future presidential candidate, was hijacked by terrorists. In exchange for the senator, the terrorists demanded ‘Pythagoras’ from the United States government; a research project that was being conducted on Lobito Island in the Moloni Republic, southern Africa. In efforts to identify these terrorists, the government began an investigation of Pythagoras.



Briefing

The Moloni government refused to cooperate and work with the United States, saying that it didn’t want interference in its current affairs. In response, the U.S. sent in an HRT special forces unit to investigate, but the team was obliterated by armed resistance, with the sole surviving operative, Teliko Friedman, taken captive. With no other options and time running out, the U.S. government called Solid Snake to infiltrate the island’s laboratory, discover the nature of Pythagoras and to rescue Senator Hach.

Commanded by former CIA agent Roger McCoy, Solid Snake successfully infiltrated the Lobito Physics and Chemistry Lab. An FBI-recommended psychic, Alice Hazel, was also assigned to help in the mission, though Snake was initially skeptical of her abilities. Snake eventually met a lone man in a control office called Gary Murray. Gary helped Snake to find Dr. Flemming by telling him of his last known location. Snake then headed to the residential block to find Flemming.

Meanwhile, two talking dolls, named Elsie and Frances, terrorized the hostages on board the captive passenger jet, Flight 326. Frances proceeded to kill the pilot and co-pilot, carving the numbers ‘1’ and ‘14’ on their chests, and transmitted photographs of them to the U.S. government.

Undercover Action

Reaching the eastern building of the residential block, Snake intended to create a false identity on a nearby security computer, in order to access the building’s rooms. To Snake’s surprise, his profile was already registered under the name ‘Hans Davis.’ After finding a decoy Flemming, Snake was ambushed by Lieutenant Leone, the leader of the mercenaries occupying the facility. Murray had apparently led him into a trap. Teliko then rescued him using a stun grenade as a diversion, and helped him to escape. After a brief exchange Snake and Teliko joined forces, though Snake soon began to suffer severe headaches.

Roger informed the two that Hans Davis had been Flemming’s supervisor several years ago, and had presided over various research projects. He had been on loan from BEAGLE as a lab chief, but had no records on file before that. When Hans had first arrived, witnesses attested that dozens of children had been taken from the mainland to Lobito Island by boat, an image eerily reminiscent of ‘The Pied Piper of Hamelin,’ having been used to test a new form of drug. Gary contacted the group by Codec and informed them that the drug was called ACUA and that Pythagoras was a Metal Gear. Gary had apparently wanted to gain the ACUA research data from Flemming and was willing to kill him after he was finished.

Egersis

Splitting up from Teliko temporarily, Snake found the real Flemming and discovered that he had been ‘Gary’ all along. Flemming then claimed that Snake was Hans Davis, with Snake beginning to struggle against Hans’ memories and personality. Flemming informed Snake that BEAGLE had needed a role model for the test subject children, and that Snake had agreed to fill the role, having been eager for someone to follow in his footsteps. Snake had become Hans, who after a while, had decided to create false memories to forget he was ever Hans in the first place. Flemming then revealed that his daughter was on Flight 326, which had been hijacked by No. 16, one of the former test subjects on Lobito, and that the numbers being carved onto the hostages were a coded message to Snake out of spite.

Teliko eventually found Snake and shot at Flemming, causing him to flee and leave behind the heavily encoded Pythagoras data. Teliko persuaded Snake that since he cannot be trusted she should hold onto the disc and he reluctantly accepted. It was around this time that Roger received a call from his superior Charles Schmeiser who was suspicious of why Roger had been so eager to participate in the mission, and why he had requested Snake to join them. Schmeiser was also suspicious of Snake’s link with BEAGLE and informed Roger and Alice that they must prepare for the possibility that Snake was losing his mind.

As Snake and Teliko headed back to the storehouse they were ambushed by Leone who claimed to have a grudge with BEAGLE, and that he had received an anonymous tip that stealing the Pythagoras data would enable him to exact revenge. Since Snake and Teliko had made things difficult for him, he decided to attack them both. Snake and Teliko eventually outran Leone with assistance from Alice, and attempted to chase Flemming to ‘Flemming’s Assembly Room,” the main lab complex on Lobito Island. As they crossed the bridge to FAR, Teliko shot at Snake, revealing that she was really a BEAGLE-hired assassin named La Clown, and escaped with the Pythagoras data.

Dream Land

Snow later found the real Teliko at Ebro Tower, and was also confronted by a mysterious doppelganger, who soon disappeared. Snake and Teliko then battled, each convinced that the other was an enemy, in an enclosed board game-style room created by La Clown. Snake won the fight, and after convincing Teliko of his affiliations, they teamed up. The two escaped just as La Clown blew up the room.

FAR

Afterwards, Snake and Teliko decided to ally themselves with Leone in order to stop Flemming. Leone and his troops prepared to enter FAR, while Snake and Teliko shut down the powerhouse in order to allow them access. However, Flemming and his ACUA soldiers ambushed the group and captured Leone. Snake and Teliko were later forced to kill Leone after he became subjected to the drug ACUA.

Entering FAR via an alternative route, Snake and Teliko are again attacked by La Clown. Maintaining Teliko’s appearance, so that Snake had trouble telling the two apart, she also used her hypnotism to ‘create” more copies of herself in an attempt to turn the battle in her favor. However, Snake and Teliko eventually managed to defeat Clown. Teliko recognized Clown’s perfume and realized that she had been the killer of her father, Collin Friedman. Snake and Teliko then took the Pythagoras data from her corpse and left her where she died.



Vs Metal Gear

Snow and Teliko eventually encounter Metal Gear KODOQUE, piloted by Flemming. Flemming had been blackmailed into following No. 16’s order, due to his daughter Constance being on board Flight 326. However, he felt that No. 16 had no intention of honoring her word, and threatened to nuke a pristine island in the South Pacific that she had dreamed of, after killing Snake. As Flemming activated Metal Gear, Teliko gained access to the machine’s interior. While Teliko disrupted its weapons fire and warded off Patrol Bots, Snake used heavy weapons to disable the towering mech. When Flemming exposed himself, Teliko managed to shoot and kill him, thwarting his plans.

Alice

Towards the conclusion of the incident, Alice was revealed to be No. 16, who was capable of using ACUA to control people’s thoughts. It was she who caused Snake to come under suspicion, by implanting the memories of Hans Davis into his mind. After Snake and Teliko successfully destroyed Metal Gear, the memories of all the people Alice had controlled came back to her simultaneously, causing a shock which led to her death.

Meanwhile, Constance Flemming turned the tables on terrorist collaborator Lena Arrow, the murderous puppeteer behind Elsie and Frances, on board Flight 326. The unassuming girl attacked a surprised Lena with a knife, revealing herself as No. 104, another Lobito test subject whose mind now inhabited Constance’s body. She then considered carving the number ‘104” onto Lena’s bones, as the latter had done to the other murdered passengers on board. With the terrorist threat foiled, Teliko and Snake successfully escaped the complex on Lobito Island.

Aftermath

At some point afterwards, the Secretary, Chairman, Secretary General, Prime Minister, and the President of the United States held talks to discuss the events of the incident, due to the serious nature of the incident. The president arrived at the meeting late due to the United States Coast Guard being too enthusiastic. The unexpected events of the mission also resulted in the meeting being held on short notice. After some deliberation, the five decided to do something drastic enough that the Secretary General mentioned they’d have to be the ‘bad guys,” before discussing other matters and then being dismissed until the next meeting within six months.

Metal Gear: Acid 2

Developer	Kojima Productions
Publisher	Konami
Director	Shinta Nojiri
Producer	Hideo Kojima Noriaki Okamura
Designer	Shinta Nojiri
Artist	Tsubasa Masao
Writer	Masahiro Yamamoto
Composer	Akihiro Honda Hiroshi Tanabe Nobuko Toda
Platform	PlayStation Portable
Release date	December 8, 2005



This game is a **non-canonical** entry in the Metal Gear series



Metal Gear Acid 2 begins with Snake, a young woman named Consuela Alvarez, and two pilots named Dave Copeland and Roddy Louiz, flying into the United States illegally when they are arrested by FBI SWAT Teams.

??? [independent timeline]

SaintLogic Incident

After being caught, Snake is pressed into a mission by his captor, an FBI agent named Dalton. Snake agrees to the job to free his friends and clear his name with Dalton. Snake's initial objective is to infiltrate a research facility operated by SaintLogic, a military arms manufacturer, located on an isolated North American island. Dalton is investigating SaintLogic for inhuman actions towards children, and utilizes Snake's abilities to infiltrate SaintLogic and uncover the truth behind their business practices. Snake eventually managed to locate the file that Dalton needed, but was interrupted by an alarm. Dalton initially feared that they were caught, although Snake deduced due to the absence of guards in his area that the alarm was actually from something else entirely, and is forced to access a communications tower.

Shortly into Snake's mission, Dalton's authority is exceeded by General Wiseman, a Joint Chief of Staff for the United States Department of Defense, with Wiseman also implying that Dalton was no longer a FBI agent. Snake slowly learns that Wiseman's involvement is in response to a SaintLogic executive, named Thomas Koppelthorn, who has made demands that the United States release several prisoners and has threatened to use nuclear weapons. Wiseman proceeds to offer Snake information regarding his past in return for Snake's assistance in



eliminating the present SaintLogic threat. Dalton and Snake, while Wiseman departed to take a call from 'Aphrodite' shortly after discovering some dead scientists, decided to follow Wiseman for the time being, although they weren't trusting of him, as he is likely going to backstab them after they stop Koppelthorn. Snake teams with Venus, Wiseman's own operative, and together they search SaintLogic for Koppelthorn. Soon after, a test is initiated, and Snake becomes aware that SaintLogic has developed a Metal Gear which Koppelthorn has taken control of. It later becomes evident that Koppelthorn is seeking revenge for an incident that occurred three years before, and among his demands are that the United States release Snake to him. General Wiseman constantly comments on a Lucinda File, which he wants Venus to obtain. As Snake and Venus search SaintLogic's research facilities, they encounter a researcher, Dr. Takiyama, and a young girl, Lucy, who proceed to join Koppelthorn's scheme. Before crossing to the building where Koppelthorn is located, Snake and Venus are met by Metal Gear Kodoque from the first Acid which was rescued before being destroyed during the events of the last game.

Upon finally meeting with Koppelthorn, Metal Gear Chaiioth Ha Qadesh, Lucy, and Dr. Takiyama, Snake and Venus learn that Koppelthorn has been 'resurrecting' his wife in the form of a young girl, Lucy. Before the final fight against Koppelthorn, it is revealed that Snake is actually a Model 3 Test Subject who was created in SaintLogic labs

by Koppelthorn's wife. Snake then learns that he is a clone of Solid Snake, who SaintLogic recovered after the Lobito Incident. Snake was sent to Serena to quell an uprising of Model 2 subjects, better known as the Praulia Massacre. The Lucinda File is unmasked to be a log of the events of the incident in Serena. After Snake and Venus defeat Koppelthorn, Lucy reveals herself to not actually be a rebirth of Lucinda Koppelthorn, but rather her own being with the consciousness of Lucinda. Lucy then declares the truth about Lucinda, who had helped Snake to escape SaintLogic and wanted to die because of her inhumane actions. Lucy kills Tom Koppelthorn and takes control of Metal Gear Chaiioth Ha Qadesh acting on her true nature of being test subject designed to kill. Snake and Venus must once again defeat Chaiioth Ha Qadesh and Lucy as well.

Snake and Venus next learn that the SaintLogic facility is wired with explosives, and learn the location of Dr. Takiyama as well as the Lucinda File. After recovering both, Venus pulls a gun on Snake at Wiseman's command. Wiseman announces that he was responsible for the Praulia Massacre because he wanted to hurry along the project with a field test. An ethnic uprising that was occurring in Serena at the time was an opportune time to test the SaintLogic subjects. This initial test did not provide sufficient information concerning the limits of the test subjects, and Wiseman ordered for the subjects to be pushed to their limits. After the massacre, Wiseman arranged for Snake to flee to the United States. Dalton was

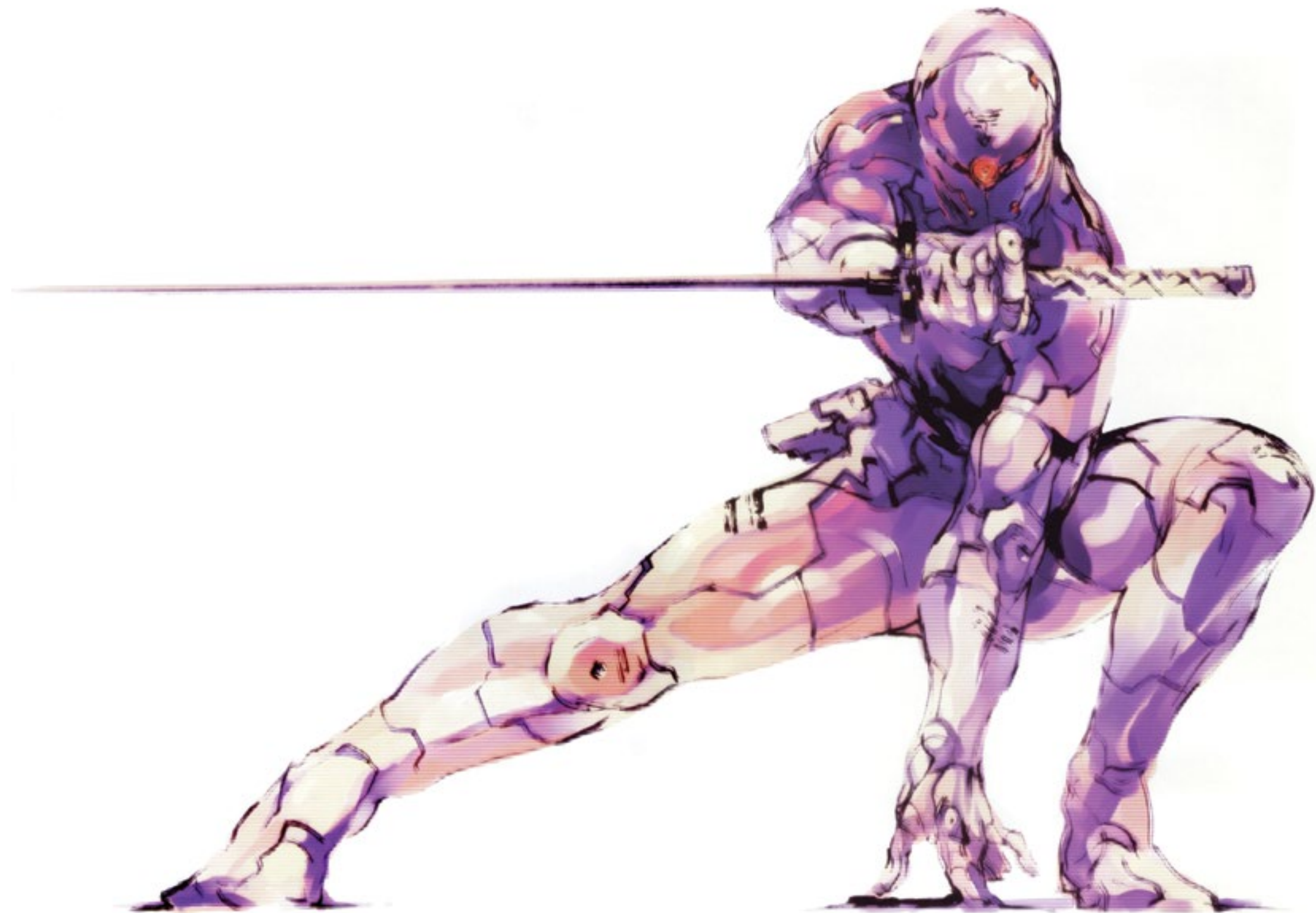
informed of Snake's entering the country and, as desired by Wiseman, apprehended Snake. Wiseman's original plan was for Dalton and Snake to attempt to infiltrate SaintLogic but become tangled in the facilities guards. At this time Wiseman was to have Venus work her way through SaintLogic and recover the Lucinda File, and place any blame on Dalton and Snake. Venus is then revealed to be a test subject, newer than Snake, who was placed in the care of Wiseman after the activities in Serena. Snake learns that Venus was the cause of his amnesia, as she had shot him during the Praulia Massacre. Snake and Venus duel and, following Venus's defeat, work their way out of the SaintLogic buildings with Dr. Takiyama. Venus and Dr. Takiyama escape however Snake is trapped inside. Venus and Takiyama escape the building safely, and outside SaintLogic witness Metal Gear Chaioth Ha Qadesh return to life. The US military, which has been called in to secure SaintLogic, fires upon Metal Gear and a missile from its rear launches, and lands in the ocean a short distance away. It is revealed in a cutscene that Snake was in the launcher instead of a missile and utilized it to escape, breaking most bones in his body. He recovered extremely quickly.

The game ends with Dr. Takiyama and Venus safely recovering from the SaintLogic incident, with General Wiseman arrested and facing charges of war crimes. Snake is confronted by Dalton, who provides him with a United States identity, his friends, and \$15 million.

In the North American and European versions, several illustrations that accompany the end credits show what happens to the game's main characters after the incident. Wiseman is shown being led away by law enforcement personnel, but his manner remains undaunted, implying perhaps that there is yet a way for him out of his predicament. Dalton gets dressed down by a superior at the FBI, although he retains a smug demeanor not unlike Wiseman's. Dr. Takiyama is merely shown looking pensive in the helicopter that carries her off the island. And in a vignette that could have been taken much later after the events of the SaintLogic incident, Venus is seen manning the checkout counter at a supermarket, hinting at her quiet assimilation into everyday life.







Interpretation of the main canon

Big Boss and Major Zero, the catalysts for the stories of the Metal Gear Solid series, are polar opposites, extremes of the same scale. While the former thirsts for anarchy (as demonstrated by his actions in Outer Heaven and Zanzibarland), the latter desires total control. Both misinterpret and corrupt the teachings of The Boss, losing sight of the reason behind her final sacrifice. Big Boss believes in an ideology that promotes individual liberty at the expense of stability, security and structure, it us restricting the true freedom of citizens to speak, to grow, and even to exist. Conversely, Zero's obsession with order, and be perceived need to preserve society by means of standardization and intrusive governance, leads society to the brink of disaster. His AI successors begin to create a future where individuals would unknowingly suffer not only restrictions in their freedom to act or express themselves, but also in their freedom to feel beyond the confines of managed boundaries, is perverted liberty of a kind might still exist in such a civilisation, but in the narrowest, least genuine sense of the word.

For Zero, freedom would be preserved by imposing a set of constraints and offering individuals liberty within this context: for Big Boss, it could be assured through the absence of constraints. The latter was, it could be argued, a delusion; even an absence of limits would prove to be a constraint in itself. Both could only define freedom in relation to boundaries, to limitations, and this was the core of their betrayal of The Boss's legacy: she saw liberty,

in a far more positive light, as the result of personal and collective commitment.

From the day they founded The Patriots, the way of Zero and Big Boss was that of oblivion – by forgetting the sense The Boss had shown them, they forgot who they were. This led both to instigate a chain of events in which the same tragedy is repeated over and over, a series of questions that always seem to elicit the same replies. This explains why the Metal Gear Solid games follow a palpable blueprint: the same themes (death, vengeance, deception), the same actors [a hero, a designated enemy, a ninja, an elite unit], the same goals (freedom, redemption). It took the child, Sunny, perhaps the least expected agent for change, to break the endless cycle to create a spiral, where the story leads from the centre to the outside. Though each episode's narrative offers a similar scenario, it is clearly different from all others, marked by deviations in the series DNA that make it unique. This, it could be said, is a reflection of life itself, and mankind in particular: reproducing fundamentally the same things, and yet never reliving exactly the same thing.

After Big Boss's failure to create his warrior's utopia in Outer Heaven and, later, Zanzibarland, Zero lost both his dearest friend, and the force that kept his principles and beliefs in check. As a consequence, he ceased to believe in mankind, in the concept of open society. He refused to entrust the world's reins to a new generation, instead favouring the creation of autonomous artificial intelligence

systems to govern in his stead. The Patriots became a power depersonalised and fundamentally inhuman, attempting to apply order to mankind by seeking the continual reproduction of the same, an administrable repetition without end. Its behaviour can be likened to a dog chasing its own tail or, more pertinently, a computer program stuck in an infinite loop. This explains why the Patriots (or, rather, the AI that succeeded its founder members) use Snake as the primary agent of the system, and the same stratagems (for example, FOXDIE) every time.

On every occasion bar the last, the circle is refreshed, the hegemony of The Patriots challenged (though not broken) when the AI fails to take an unseen variable into account. Of greatest import is the reality that, in each episode, Ocelots true role, his betrayal, is never anticipated or understood. However, every time the story is told, certain distinctions and innovations abide: the surviving protagonists grow, and certain things live on (for example, the influence that Snake has on those he meets). This may be what Nietzsche meant by the 'Eternal Return of the Same' and especially by his famous motto, 'Become what you are', so often misinterpreted. This is echoed in Big Boss's words once he finally understood what The Boss wanted: 'It's not about changing the world. It's about doing our best to leave the world the way it is.'

If, as Big Boss asserts just before he dies, the world is at the dawn of a new era, it remains to be seen what mankind will manage to do with this second chance, especially the most direct casualties afflicted by the machinations of The Patriots. When the soldiers are freed from the SOP system, the effects of the accumulated emotions, thoughts and memories that were repressed by their nanomachines suddenly resurface. Clearly, the consciousness, the ego, forgets, but the mind and body retain, collect, suffer things, whether we realize it or not. In the new age, many things will thus need to be learned afresh. This is all the more true for the victims of the Sons of the Patriots Syndrome (SOPS), but also for the others, all those that were affected by the Patriots' censorship, and whose lives were thus stolen, if only in part. The adjustment might be especially hard on Snake, and impossible within his limited lifespan, as he has been at the fulcrum of The Patriots' deceptions throughout.

So what will Snake do with his father's legacy? What will he pass on? Not his 'genes', not the 'memes' of his bygone epoch, not a 'scene' given that the times have changed; perhaps the 'sense' of his existence. then? Perhaps his perseverance, his endeavor, his fighting spirit, his unwavering will might inspire others to live by his example. With the new challenges that await mankind now that the Patriots are gone, no doubt they will need such values to avoid past mistakes. It is the significance that we attach to our deeds that enables us to achieve the best

results: this is what Meryl and Johnny prove by being perfectly synchronized on Outer Haven without SOP; Snake by getting back to his feet a thousand times out of sheer willpower; Raiden by finding the strength to accomplish miracles even though his artificial body is cracked and broken.

Nevertheless, the few months that remain for Snake (or, rather, David) to live will barely allow him to catch a glimpse of the horizons of this new beginning. He is a clone built for conflict, a 'blue rose', an aberration: a thing that does not occur naturally, an orphan of a dying epoch. In the post-credits dialogue, however, we hear Otacon dissuade his closest friend from spending his final days alone; an encouraging first step for a new world order.





Y22472



Self-published by Patrick Abels

Josephstr. 38-40
D-50678 Cologne
Germany

Concept & art direction: Patrick Abels
Editorial design: Xenia Baumann & Patrick Abels

Artwork by Yoji Shinkawa
Screenshots and Content by Metal Gear Wikia

All shown artwork and images belong to their respected owners.
This book is not afflicted with Konami Computer Entertainment Japan or Kojima Productions in any way.

